

苏小暖 著

邪王追妻：

# 废材逆天小姐

ATHEA  
WATERBURY



# Chapter 301 – Returning to Su Manor (1)

---

There were actually people who took out a dish to start betting on His Highness Prince Jin and the seventh rank Liu Elder Ancestor from Liu family, to see who would win and who would lose.

On account of His Highness Prince Jin's many years prestige and being a super gifted genius' fame—

The overwhelming majority of people bet that His Highness Prince Jin would win.

As a result, people who bet money, people who didn't bet, those that were enjoying watching a show, everyone, without exception, all crowded on the street where Prince Jin's Royal Manor was. All of them surrounded the safe area three hundred meters outside of the residence, animatedly waiting to watch the show.

Sure enough, as they had expected, not long after, the Elder Ancestor from the Liu family, who had come to the gate in a rage, ready to go all out in a battle, was unexpectedly carried by people and thrown out. At the same time, they also threw out the second young master from the Liu family who had strutted around the imperial capital backed by his family's influence.

Crash——

When they saw the Liu family's grandfather and grandson pair again, the crowd of people watching all inhaled a mouthful of cold air.

Tragic, simply too tragic.

The Liu Family's Elder Ancestor's clothing around his chest area was covered in blood. His complexion was as pale as paper, with both hands trembling and shaking. He was tossed to the ground and couldn't even crawl up. This person

was actually a seventh rank, ah! A grand and majestic seventh rank expert was actually tossed out as if tossing out garbage...His Highness Prince Jin was simply not human, he was naturally a god!

Compared to the Elder Ancestor from the Liu family, the Liu family's second young master was simply even more tragic.

One could only see that the clothing on his body were rags. His head and face was covered in dust and blood, mixed with sweat. His entire person looked no better than a beggar. Nowhere did he still have a little of that normally jade-faced playboy appearance that was distinguished and confident. It simply was as incomparable as night and day.

Everyone was extremely stunned, their admiration for His Highness Prince Jin became even greater, like the waves of major rivers, continuous and endless.

“Hey, like I said, Liu family's Elder Ancestor isn't worth a damn. He would even dare to bring the fight to Prince Jin's Royal Manor. Ha ha, see, this time, wasn't he thrown out?”

“That's right, that second Liu young master, just a moment ago, was still boasting by saying that his grandfather had broken through to the seventh rank. Why is it this seventh rank seems so weak? Perhaps he was only talking big?”

“Ha ha ha, maybe he wasn't bragging. Can't say for sure if that Liu family's Elder Ancestor is indeed a seventh rank? The only thing that can be proven is that His Highness Prince Jin has formidable strength that is unsurpassed!”

“That's right, a seventh rank expert was beaten like this and successfully driven out in a clean sweep. Heaven knows how deep and profound His Highness Prince Jin's strength is. It simply is too terrible, he isn't even twenty years old yet!”

At that moment, everyone was spiritedly discussing this, numerous words of praise were heaped upon the body of His Highness Prince Jin. They practically lifted him onto the altar of Gods with their praises. As for Liu family's Elder Ancestor, he was naturally trodden into the dust.

Ignoring the spirited discussions and hubbub from outside, within Prince Jin's Royal Manor, the follow-up was still developing.

Su Luo curiously fiddled with the dark bronze plaque in her hand.

This bronze plaque was approximately the size of a child's palm. It was square-shaped, with an outward appearance that was black as ink. There were only three words carved on top, and the font was flamboyant. Even if you carefully considered it, you would also not be able to recognize it. Apart from this, there was nothing else that could be made out.

Su Luo couldn't tell what it was, so she lifted her eyes to ask Nangong Liuyun: "What is this thing?"

After Liu family's Elder Ancestor lost it, he had an upset appearance. It was sufficient to prove that this thing was a treasure. She still really couldn't make out what was so mysterious inside this.

Nangong Liuyun raised an eyebrow and smiled: "Really don't know what to say to you, this girl, that would be good. Yesterday, you refined Spirit Restoration Pills that are comparable to Intermediate level's medicinal pill. You also broke through to the third rank. Today, you obtained another treasure from that old, coarse fellow from the Liu family. Hey, hey, this is indeed the Liu family's secret cultivation method that isn't spread out. Do you not see what words are written on top?"

"What words?" Su Luo gazed attentively at the front side of that piece of bronze plaque with its flamboyant, illegible, wild and rash words, "Spirit Dance Steps?"

## Chapter 302 – Returning to Su Manor (2)

---

“Right, it is precisely the Spirit Dance Steps.” The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth hooked into a devilish smile, “The Liu family’s Spirit Dance Steps, this is the most outstanding martial arts teachings under the heavens that became extinct. That you can use such a manner to obtain it, it can really be said that your luck is so good as to defy the natural order of heaven.”

Su Luo expressed her puzzlement: “Since the Liu family’s Spirit Dance Steps is so prominent in the world, why is it that Liu Chengfeng and them seemed unable to learn it? Is it because to learn this there still needs some other condition?”

Nangong Liuyun smilingly pinched Su Luo’s little face, nodded his head and with a smile, said: “A child that is also teachable, Lou girl is indeed smart. Just talking and you are able to see the main point.”

“Obviously, it was you who at the beginning when attacking said that this generation of the Liu family did not have anyone qualified to learn it.” Su Luo massaged the cheek that was pinched until it was a little sore by him. With puffed up cheeks, she glared at him, “Quickly tell me, in the end what is the matter?”

Nangong Liuyun smothered a laugh, on one hand teasing her, and on the other hand explaining to her to clear up the confusion: “If you want to learn this shadow-like dance steps, the first prerequisite is a powerful and strong mental focus. Do you still remember your mental strength? When you tested it, you reached the purple color. Only this kind of gifted talent could practice Spirit Dance Steps. As to this generation in the Liu family, there is absolutely no one in the younger generation with this aptitude.”

“So it was like this. No wonder just a moment ago, before when Liu family’s Elder made the bet, he regretted it and wanted to take it back. As a result, he

was conned by you and stopped.” Su Luo smiled very proudly and flipped a glance at him, “You, such a two-faced, sinister guy, since the beginning, you were scheming against them. Their old man also does not have it easy in life.”

Nangong Liuyun was hooked by Su Luo’s glance until he was head over heels infatuated. He grabbed and held Su Luo in his arms and started to laugh heartily: “No better or worse than you. Luo girl, even though I do not know the reason, but didn’t you still assist and pretend together with this king? Who else would have this kind of rapport with you? How about Lou girl just marry this king now?”

“Wishful thinking!” Su Luo let out two snorts and pushed him away, “Now that the Liu family’s grandfather and grandson pair have been carried out, those people that were lying in secret waiting to ambush outside the residence should also have withdrawn right?”

Nangong Liuyun noncommittally let out a ‘hum, hum’.

“I have already gone out for a few days, and still don’t know what is happening in Su Manor. I ought to go back and have a look.” Su Luo somewhat helplessly sighed and said, “Really hope that there wasn’t an accident.”

“Humph!” Once he heard that Su Luo wanted to go back, Nangong Liuyun’s entire face was unhappy. With a disagreeable expression, he turned his face away.

“What are you doing.” Su Luo impatiently pinched his cheek, this guy who looked very outstanding and formidable, why was it that sometimes, he would seem so childish. She helplessly said: “For no cause or reason, why are you getting angry? You really look very childish, okay stop being mad.”

“Then you must not go back!” Nangong Liuyun grabbed her hand and pulled it to a stop, his pitch-black eyes fixed their gaze on her. His eyes had an expression full of hope and strong expectations.

Not mentioning what Su Luo felt, now the servants in Prince Jin’s residence that were standing below, collectively, simply all of them seemed to be swept by the wind into disarray!

Heavens ahahahahaha~~~~~

Was this person really their brilliant, with amazing martial arts and insufferably arrogant, His Highness Prince Jin? This acting like a spoiled child, rolling around, pretending to feel wronged and acting cute little appearance, clearly was like a brat asking for candy to eat from an adult, don't you think? Compared to the Prince Jin like this, they were even more used to that 'at the slightest thing would cut off a person's limb, blood flowing thick like a hurricane' type of His Highness Prince Jin, don't you think so too?

A crowd of people, with their eyes wide open, all freakishly stared at Nangong Liuyun. They were itching to throw themselves up there and check to see if their family's Highness had been switched with another person.

Su Luo was a more sensitive person, all at once, she was able to perceive the peculiar light in the servants' gaze. She recalled that right now, they were in a public place with numerous people present. She casually feigned a light cough: "Nangong Liuyun, you are His Highness Prince Jin, however, what about your image?"

## Chapter 303 – Returning to Su Manor (3)

---

Why was it that this guy didn't appreciate her good intentions even a bit, and instead directly pounced on her and embraced her. He even leaned close and breathed into her ear, spurting out hot fervent breaths while leisurely saying: "Ever since I meet you, my image had left home. Do you want to find it and bring it back?"

Su Luo was simply speechless to an extreme point. She somewhat flusteredly pushed Nangong Liuyun away: "A lot of people are watching, for my benefit, you should act more decent! Don't ruin my pure reputation!" In the future, she still wanted to marry and be someone's woman in the traditional role of a good wife!

Nangong Liuyun was like a scoundrel sticking to her body, no matter how she pushed, his body would not move a jot. The strength of his arms were as powerful as an iron clamp.

It seemed as if only just now did he notice the many gazes that were as bright as daylight from the unwanted guests at his side. Consequently, His Highness Prince Jin, who was just now smiling at Su Luo almost salivatingly, turned his head and faintly swept them a glance.

This glance that he swept them with seemed ordinary and calm, but after those servants were swept by that gaze, without exception, they were full of fear and trepidation, as if facing a disaster.

This expression was too frightening!

Couldn't, couldn't be wrong! This person was indeed their Highness Prince Jin. That expression, that aura of death, that awe-inspiring dignity, clearly it was him!

His Highness was still that Highness, very terrifying....A herd of servants promptly scattered like birds and beasts. In the blink of an eye, they skillfully left,

completely not leaving even a single trace.

This was already not the first time Su Luo saw such a scene. However, she was still not used to it, letting out a dry coughing sound and somewhat speechlessly, turned her face away.

Who knew that now, Nangong Liuyun would actually fawningly pull at her sleeves while trying to win her favor. His face had a smiling expression with a wheedling undertone: “Well, now that the idling people *et cetera* have all cleared out, can we continue?”

“Continue what?” Su Luo expressed her confusion.

“You lied to me!” God knows why Nangong Liuyun would glare at her with a face full of accusation and hidden bitterness. That little appearance was simply adorable to the extreme.

“What did I lie to you about?” Su Luo blinked innocently towards him.

Such a huge reaction from this guy, people who didn’t understand would have the impression that she had ruined his purity.

Nangong Liuyun let out two ‘humph’ sounds, saying resentfully and accusingly: “Just now, you had obviously disliked the offending stares of many people, thus were unwilling to be affectionate towards this king. Now that the people have all left, why haven’t you come over quickly to kiss this king yet!”

Three black lines appeared on Su Luo’s forehead! This person was young, but he should not be this childish! He was still a prince!

She just knew that Nangong Liuyun, this guy, didn’t have a bottom line, if you took him seriously, you would lose.

“Enough, not going to play with you, now, I want to go home.” Su Luo fiercely sucked in a deep breath. She constrained the fire in her chest and said it with a deadpan expression.

Nangong Liuyun saw that Su Luo had already decided to go back. He could only pull at her sleeves: “This king will accompany you and go back together, okay?”

“Don’t, by all means, don’t!” Su Luo made a quick decision and declined right away, “If you and I go back together, what would it be regarded as? Everyone

would think that the married off daughter had returned home! This absolutely, definitely, must not be done!” If it was done like this, the consequences would certainly be grave.

This was also out of the question, that was also met with refusal. The hidden bitterness in Nangong Liuyun’s eyes was becoming increasingly obvious. He spread open a pair of vivid and bright eyes like peach blossoms, not speaking a word. Just like this, he looked at Su Luo. Always watching, watching continuously...watching until Su Luo’s scalp felt numb.

“You...I will return first. You do as you see fit, as long as it doesn’t affect me, then it’s good!” Before she finally slipped away, Su Luo, in the end, still threw out such ambiguous words.

However, Su Luo did not know, that just because of these ambiguous words, Nangong Liuyun was about to bring her what kind of ‘pleasant surprise’.

If she knew, very likely, she would ruthlessly tie up Nangong Liuyun and not let him take a step out of Prince Jin’s Royal manor, okay?

## Chapter 304 – Returning to Su Manor (4)

---

Su Luo washed off her disguise and changed back into what she normally wore everyday. She quietly and without rest slipped back into Su Manor.

Seeing Su Manor's current condition, Su Luo couldn't help but to suck in a breath of cold air.

She hadn't left for that long, counting with her fingers, it was only one night and nothing more. However, wasn't Su Manor's change rather too large?

Originally, Su Manor had a towering, majestic and luxurious atmosphere, but owing to the berserk fifth rank fierce panther going crazy, more than half of Su Manor had been destroyed. Now, what appeared before her eyes was an ash-gray scene of devastation that made people unable to bear to look.

However, Su Luo's luck was still considered pretty good.

Because the fierce panther was collared by Su Qing, therefore its hatred for her was the greatest. So it had only attacked the courtyards surrounding Su Qing's. Su Luo's courtyard, meanwhile, was separated from Su Qing's courtyard by a huge distance, therefore, it had avoided the main disaster area. Her courtyard appeared to be undamaged.

Originally, when she saw this kind of situation, Su Luo's mood was still very good. However, when she entered Wisteria Park, in a split second, her face pulled down.

At this moment Lu Luo's hand and foot were being forcibly held down by two maidservants. And in front of her, Su Xi was just standing there, strutting around while blustering to the servant Xiao Yu at her side: "Beat her, heavily beat her for this Miss! Today if this loathsome girl is not beaten to death, then this Miss won't go back."

While speaking, Su Xi was also satisfiedly sitting on a chair holding a little teacup leisurely and contentedly sipping tea.

As she listened to the crisp and melodious sounds produced from Lu Luo being slapped, her mood became even better. It seemed that her face was simply glowing and she was even leisurely crooning a little song.

When Su Luo took a step to walk into her courtyard, the first thing she heard was the sound of Lu Luo being slapped.

Her long, shapely eyebrows wrinkled slightly, as she coldly shouted: “Stay your hands!”

Seeing that Su Luo had appeared, Su Xi seemed to be somewhat surprised. But very quickly, the corner of her mouth was brimming with a mysterious sly grin, “Oh? Take a look, who is it that had come back? You still know this is your home? Still know to return to the manor?”

Su Luo’s eyes indifferently swept a glance at her, her thin eyebrows knotted. She also swept a glance at that Xiao Yu: “This lady told you to desist, didn’t you hear?”

Who knew that Xiao Yu would lift her head and mockingly smiled at Su Luo: “Is the fourth Miss speaking to this servant? This servant is not your servant girl. Naturally. I do not need to listen to your orders.”

Even though she kept using the courteous ‘you’ for Su Luo, yet at the same time. Xiao Yu’s expression didn’t have a little bit of respectful deference. While returning Su Luo’s words in a subversive manner, at the same time, she lifted up her palm to slap towards Lu Luo’s cheek!

She was certainly not a good-for-nothing who didn’t know any martial arts. Not to mention, even she was a first rank martial artist, which was far more impressive compared to this good-for-nothing fourth Miss.

Just when Xiao Yu’s hand was only a tiny distance away from Lu Luo, the corner of Su Luo’s mouth lifted into an apathetic sneer. Not knowing how she moved, one could only see the brutal afterimage of a leg float pass. Then afterwards, was only a violent blood-curdling shriek that came from Xiao Yu’s mouth.

At this moment, the Xiao Yu who hadn’t had time to react was kicked flying by

Su Luo. After that, her back heavily smashed on top of the wall, finally, she slid down tumbling to the ground, motionless from passing out.

Momentarily, almost everyone stared at Su Luo with an incredulous expression...with a kind of expression like seeing a ghost, they appallingly staring at her. Their eyes were opened wide into huge circles.

Wasn't Su Luo a good-for-nothing? Wasn't it that she didn't have a little bit of cultivation strength? When all was said and done, how did she accomplish this? How could she directly kick a first rank Xiao Yu flying and unconscious?

Was this still a good-for-nothing?

Su Xi's reaction was the largest, first she stared blankly, then a sinister expression flashed through her eyes and she angrily ranted: "Su Luo you slut, you dare to hit my servant girl? I will kill you!"

Hardly finished speaking, Su Xi directly slapped towards Su Luo with her palm.

## Chapter 305 – Returning to Su Manor (5)

---

During the time it took for the force of Su Xi's slapping palm to arrive, Su Luo whirled her body and avoided it. She nimbly circled around to Su Xi's back and severely kicked at her tender, charming and plump buttocks!

The matter happened so unexpectedly, Su Xi was completely unguarded, this —

Being kicked by Su Luo like this, thanks to the effect from gravity, her entire body facing forward abruptly dashed forth. She simply could not stop the forward momentum.

Just as well, in front of her just so happened to be a very round and sturdy, iron-like wooden pillar.

Only a huge 'thump' ramming sound could be heard, Su Xi's head had close contact with the iron-like wooden pillar. Her entire head was pasted onto that pillar.

Such an enormous force of impact slammed her whole head until it was dazed and confused. For a long while, she couldn't recover her senses because she was knocked stupid.

When the surrounding flunkies and servant girls saw this scene, they were all stupefied. Each and every one of them had a dumbstruck expression as they looked at Su Luo. Then, once again, they turned around to shockingly stare at Su Xi. who had almost fainted from the pain of the collision.

Didn't the fifth Miss a few days ago just say that she had been promoted to the third rank? But how could she be so easily kicked flying by the legendary good-for-nothing fourth Miss? This world was too crazy, too chaotic...

Su Xi returned to her senses with great difficulty. She threw off the dizziness in

her brain and turned around to look at Su Luo with a stupid expression. Very quickly, her expression recovered and she covered her sore forehead. In her eyes burned a raging inferno!

“Su Luo! You slut! You actually dare to kick me! Simply courting death!” Su Xi’s fury soared. Basically, she hadn’t realized where was the unreasonableness in being kicked flying by a good-for-nothing. Shortly after, one could see her palm slapping towards Su Luo’s face!

Su Xi’s full strength was in this strike, her palm’s strength was so powerful that it scared people.

At this very moment, a contemptuous smile appeared on Su Luo’s mouth.

She didn’t dodge nor avoid it, and her right hand was firmly clenched into a fist. Under everyone’s astonished gaze, her fist met the force of Su Xi’s palm head-on, connecting and joining together.

The fist and palm intersected, producing a violent hitting sound. Afterwards, what astonished everyone was that originally, they thought that Su Luo would be slapped flying by Su Xi, but instead, she was able to receive that palm strike while firmly standing her ground. Su Luo steadily stood in her original place, in contrast to Su Xi who had retreated back seven continuous steps with ‘thump, thump, thump’ sounds.

“You——” Such an intense contrast in power made Su Xi immediately stupefied.

No matter what, she didn’t believe that this good-for-nothing was actually able to receive the power of her palm strike. In addition, she was able to send her retreating from the aftershock.

She could clearly sense the surging spirit power within Su Luo’s body.

How was this possible? She was undoubtedly a good-for-nothing, for so many years, she had never cultivated. How could it be possible that all of a sudden, she would surpass her, this young gifted genius? This was impossible!

Su Xi’s eyes were full of disbelief, angry thoughts flashing across her ashen face. She gnashed her teeth and repeatedly humphed.

Even if you, Su Luo, was not a good-for-nothing, so what? Even if you have also reached the third rank, don't even think about fighting with me, Su Xi!

“Netherworld sword!” Soon after, Su Xi burst out with a shout, from her sleeves appeared the handle of a flexible sword. The light seemed to flow and shine on top of the sword, and like a ray of light, it ruthlessly thrust towards Su Luo's throat.

On account of having been defeated by Su Luo twice already, Su Xi had a sense of crisis that she had never felt before. Now, her heart already had killing intent towards Su Luo.

“Netherworld sword is the Miss's most accomplished skill, this time, the fourth Miss is screwed!” Having regained consciousness, Xiao Yu had her hand protecting her chest and sat leaning against the wall. She watched the fight in front of her, looking at Su Luo with vicious rays of light bursting from her eyes.

The Netherworld sword divided into two, then the two subdivided into four. When it reached Su Luo's throat, it had already divided into eight sharp blades.

The eight sharp blades formed into a circle, with the head of the blades pointing straight at all the vital points on Su Luo's body.

## Chapter 306 – Returning to Su Manor (6)

---

Su Luo's gaze was cold and calm as she watch those eight, cold double-edged swords quickly fly towards her.

Even though Su Xi's Netherworld sword technique's prestige was great and had a flourishing style with an extremely fast speed, but in Su Luo's eyes, it seemed full of mistakes. To Su Luo, its speed was slow, like a replay in slow motion.

A ridiculing smile appeared in Su Luo's eyes.

A third rank Su Xi, if it was a few days ago, she would have had to use assassin methods if she was to defeat her.

But now, too bad, she had also been promoted to the third rank. Third rank versus third rank, she was even capable of defeating Liu Chengfeng, why would she fear a very minor person like Su Xi?

The corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked up slightly, not holding back any longer, she condensed eight small fireballs that wrapped up all the sharp blades.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

The small fireballs crashed into the double-edged blades. The double-edged blades that were originally illusionary were now made formless, leaving behind only that cold sword heading straight for Su Luo's throat!

Su Luo threw out her dagger that could cut through iron-like mud. The dagger shot towards that sharp sword, and both weapons met in mid-air!

Immediately, there was a burst of fireworks, with lightning sounds echoing endlessly.

Soon after, the dagger that was currently winning, pierced through the sharp sword and ruthlessly stabbed towards Su Xi's throat!

Seeing that hellish-looking dagger rapidly approaching, a panicked expression flashed through Su Xi's eyes. She was overwhelmed with terror as she became aware of an aura of death sweeping towards her own throat. It seemed as if she saw the silhouette of the death god.

With the dagger getting closer, the terror in Su Xi's eyes became increasingly clearer. She even forgot to dodge it.

Just at this critical moment of life and death, a gold coin shot swiftly towards the dagger. One could only hear a crisp 'whizz' sound.

The dagger collided with the gold coin, and it shook a few times before finally falling to the ground powerlessly.

However, before it could fall to the ground, it ended up in Su Luo's hand.

"Second older sister!" Su Xi turned her head around, seeing the beautiful image of that woman appear, immediately, her face was full of jubilation. Holding her arms, she was practically crying tears of joy.

When the surrounding servants saw Su Qing's arrival, all of their expressions changed. Their eyes held reverence but they shrank their bodies moving backwards to avoid her, praying they could evade Su Qing's line of sight.

Su Qing, the rumored legendary gifted genius, was Grandmaster Lan Hai's personal disciple. At such a young age, she had already broken through to the fourth rank. Her future prospects were simply limitless and immeasurable.

Su Qing had always been pure and cold as a lotus. She was known as an ice beauty. She would never berate a servant, but would kill people. She would show no mercy when killing people and her methods were savage. As a result, the servants' fear of her in their minds was even deeper.

Su Qing was dressed in a light green, unadorned skirt which clung to her slender waistline. That exquisite little face had an austere expression. Her long, shapely eyebrows wrinkled, evidently, she was not in a very good mood.

"Second older sister! You finally came! Boo-hoo boo-hoo——" Seeing Su Qing, it seemed as if Su Xi immediately got a backbone. Just a moment ago, both of her eyes were hazy with watery mist due to having received a fright, but now, they suddenly had two sparkling and translucent teardrops sliding down. She held on

to Su Qing, sobbing and unable to say a word, but was furiously pointing at Su Luo. She was still sobbing spasmodically, though she also complained in a loud voice: “Second older sister! Quickly avenge me! Su Luo, this slut, wants to kill me!”

Su Qing tenderly wiped away that string of teardrops on Su Xi’s face, saying with a bland tone of voice: “Foolish girl, you can’t even defeat a good-for-nothing. You are an expert at bringing disgrace to Father and Mother. Now, see if afterwards you still dare to be lazy.”

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth hooked into a shallow, secretive, ridiculing smile.

These words spoken by Su Qing were very interesting. She said that Su Xi specialized in bring disgrace to Father and Mother. This completely did not take her, Su Luo, to be part of the family.

However, it was also correct, in Su Qing’s innocent, lotus flower-like eyes that were pure and icily arrogant; how could it turn out to have a sense of Su Luo’s existence, since she was a good-for-nothing?

## Chapter 307 – Returning to Su Manor (7)

---

As expected, after placating Su Xi, Su Qing's pair of ice-cold beautiful eyes were like sharp swords hurtling towards Su Luo. She used a scrutinizing gaze to cast a quick sidelong glance at Su Luo. With an impassive expression, she frowned and said: "You are that Su Luo?"

"Don't know what advice second older sister has?" Su Luo inscrutably met her probing gaze.

Su Qing cast a cold glance at her. It was quite clear that she still hadn't placed Su Luo's existence in her eyes. She merely gave a light but cold snort: "Didn't expect that you girl was able to conceal it so deeply."

Su Xi's strength wasn't at all lacking. Able to successfully force Su Xi to become like this, then Su Luo's cultivation was definitely above the third rank. However, what was baffling was that she couldn't sense even a little bit of the spirit aura on her body. This point, Su Qing was unable to understand even a little bit.

"Such a negligible cultivation of mine, how could it enter a cultivation expert's eye like second older sister's?" Su Luo's gaze was blase, the corner of her mouth moved slightly, and with a smile that was not quite a smile, cast a quick glance at Su Qing.

Su Qing's, that kind of arrogant aura of looking down at everything, was everywhere. Even though she already knew that Su Luo was not a good-for-nothing, still, the current Su Luo in her eyes was still the same existence as before, that of an ant. She basically didn't feel that Su Luo was worthy of her notice.

Naturally, Su Luo also didn't have a good opinion of her.

However, although Su Qing's expression was cool, compared to Su Xi's, it

was much more horrible. Even though Su Xi was spoiled, rude and unreasonable, but her strength was shown right there. In addition, all of her emotions were exhibited on her face, at one glance, you could see through its depths.

In contrast, Su Qing regarded everything with an impassive expression. Her complexion was smooth and tranquil with an apathetic expression. However, she seemed like an enigma, nobody could guess what she was thinking.

Su Qing bitingly glanced at Su Luo, the corner of her mouth moved slightly: “You actually have some self-knowledge.”

Her eyebrows lifted a tiny bit and was non-committal.

Su Qing coldly said: “Since it’s like this, then kneel down and kowtow to Su Xi, acknowledging your mistake. Kowtow nine hundred and ninety-nine times, and I will spare you from death.”

Kowtow nine hundred and ninety-nine times? Su Qing indeed was heartless.

Su Luo glanced at her with an unmoved expression, then she coldly said: “Second older sister, you are unaware of some things, the first person that made a move to injury someone was not me, but Su Xi.”

Unexpectedly, Su Qing clearly nodded her head and coldly said: “She lost, naturally I will lecture her. As for you, you must kowtow and apologize.”

She knew and yet still dared to be so demanding with her. It was truly two completely different standards. Su Qing was really emboldened by her backing. Su Luo laughed grimly in her heart, but it didn’t show on her face as she coldly asked: “If not?”

Su Qing impatiently frowned: “Since just now, you disregarded sisterly relationship and even dared to try shooting Su Xi dead, in that case, then have a taste of my dagger.”

She just finished speaking, and without waiting for Su Luo to respond, the dagger in her sleeve abruptly flew towards Su Luo. It targeted straight at the vital point on her throat!

The dagger split the air and came like a strong wind, didn’t know how many

times stronger it was when compared to Su Xi's move from before.

A fourth rank martial artist was really deserving to be called a fourth rank martial artist. Too far above when compared to a third rank.

However, a fourth rank martial artist wasn't someone Su Luo hadn't killed before. Her complexion sunk down, a sneer flashed through her thoughts.

Since Su Qing dared to strike, then today, let's have a look and finally see how difficult she was to deal with. See what kind of means and ability she had that let her be this arrogant!

Su Qing made a move before her words had even faded. That sharp dagger immediately aggressively shot directly towards Su Luo. Its movement followed a strange trajectory, simply impossible for a person to guard against.

Su Luo's hands intertwined together in front of her chest, condensing out a large black handprint. With a 'bang' sound, it smashed towards that dagger!

The huge, black handprint and the dagger rammed into each other. Immediately, Su Luo felt a burst of acute pain coming from the web between her thumb and forefinger...

## Chapter 308 – Returning to Su Manor (8)

---

A portion of qi and blood rushed up from her chest, and Su Luo spit out a mouthful of blood on the spot.

At the moment, she dared not be rash, with ‘clunk, clunk, clunk’ sounds. her footsteps hurriedly fell back from the recoil. She directly moved back a distance of more than ten steps. Finally, her back severely hit the wall.

This collision directly knocked her qi and blood into turmoil. A metallic and sweet taste came from her throat, and suddenly, she spurted out another mouthful of blood.

Su Luo simply swiped away the bloodstain at the corner of her mouth, a pair of bright eyes stared at Su Qing.

Sure enough, third rank and the fourth rank was as different as the sky and the earth.

In addition, seeing the manner in which Su Qing struck just a moment ago, she clearly was not at the beginning of fourth rank. Instead, it appeared as if she was at the middle of the fourth rank.

Because when she was at the Sunset Mountain Range being hunted by the subordinates of the Jade Lake’s fairy in order to kill her, the ones trying to kill her, if not at the third rank, then they were at fourth rank. As a result, with regards to martial artists at this rank, Su Luo was relatively more familiar with them.

At this moment, Su Qing shot Su Luo a glance, that pair of clear and attractive eyebrows actually wrinkled.

With regards to Su Luo being able to block that dagger from before, she was clearly extremely dissatisfied, owing to the fact that that dagger consumed

seventy percent of her strength. She believed from the bottom of her heart that she could directly kill Su Luo on the spot.

However, even if it was like this, again, so what? Su Luo was simply not her opponent.

A ridiculing expression appeared within Su Qing's clever eyes: "Since you insist on courting death, then I will help you complete this wish."

Perhaps before, Su Qing still thought that Su Luo wasn't worth consideration. She only considered her to be a disposable ant, but now, she clearly had her attention fixed on Su Luo. She didn't plan on letting her go at this point.

She coldly humphed and once again struck towards Su Luo.

This time, she didn't use a weapon, rather, she condensed her spirit force into her right palm. Her right palm slapped directly towards Su Luo's face.

A moment ago, Su Xi had used this exact move and was kicked by Su Luo. Su Qing had seen it very clearly.

Now, since it was to help her younger sister retrieve back her dignity, naturally, using this strike was the best possible method.

Su Luo's eyes flashed and a cold intent appeared in her pupils.

Within this Su Manor, Su Qing and Su Xi would just treat her with such aggressiveness. Saying it bluntly, it was even to the point of wanting to kill her. They were truly bold, could it be that they were not even afraid of Su Zian?

No, a ridiculing, grim, smiling expression passed through Su Luo's eyes. Usually, Su Zian wasn't happy with her, and to add on top of that, with last time's affair, he was even more unhappy with her. If Su Qing really killed her, then he would immediately look for an excuse for Su Qing to be exonerated, right?

It was just like this, so Su Qing could have this kind of confidence and keep repeating the statement of wanting to kill her?

Facing the approaching momentum from that tumultuous palm strike, Su Luo once again released a large black handprint in midair. Staking it all today because of her serious injury, she absolutely also wouldn't let Su Qing have an easy time.

Just at this time, an angry voice sounded from outside of the door.

“Now, everyone just stop!”

Because of this voice, Su Qing’s palm strike slowed down, then she withdrew it.

Su Luo also followed by withdrawing her own large handprint.

Both of them looked towards the place where the sound was coming from.

They only saw Su Jingyu walking quickly towards them from outside of the courtyard. His forehead was full of sweat. His nervous expression still carried a thread of worry, furiously saying: “What are you two doing right now? Still think the inside of the manor wasn’t damaged enough?”

Su Qing frowned and was just about to speak, but was interrupted post-haste by Su Jingyu. One only saw Su Jingyu pull at Su Qing’s hand and immediately start to walk away: “Second younger sister, your older brother has been looking for you for a long time and finally found you. Quick, quickly come with second older brother to the reception hall.”

Su Qing unconcernedly shook off his hand, and in a cold, clear voice, said: “Older brother’s temperament seems a little too anxious.”

Unexpectedly, not only did Su Jingyu not listen to her input, instead, he was so anxious he nearly started to stomp his feet: “Second younger sister! You really can keep your composure. Do you know who came to our residence?” .

## Chapter 309 – Returning to Su Manor (9)

---

“No matter who comes to our residence, older brother ought to be calm and unperturbed. You shouldn’t be this worried and anxious, otherwise, how could father dare to hand over such a large place like Su Manor to you in the future?” Su Qing frowned, clearly, she was dissatisfied with Su Jingyu’s conduct.

Su Jingyu was so anxious that he almost stomped his foot: “Why still be calm and unperturbed? His Highness Prince Jin! His Highness Prince Jin has come to our residence!”

“Who?” Su Qing’s complexion immediately became sluggish as she gazed at Su Jingyu with a complicated expression.

“Who do you think it is? On this earth, can there be a second His Highness Prince Jin in existence?” Su Jingyu’s anxious tone carried a touch of excitement, “Second younger sister, you are really too much. You and His Highness Prince Jin’s relationship have already reached this stage, why did you conceal it from us this tightly? It even caught Mother and Father somewhat totally unprepared.”

“Huh?” Su Qing was somewhat puzzled. Apart from last time when she found out from the Venerable Beichen Ying’s mouth that His Highness Prince Jin had a favorable impression of her, recently, she hadn’t even seen His Highness Prince Jin ah....

Su Jingyu was so excited that he was nearly ready to dance in circles. He happily said: “His Highness Prince Jin brought over a lot of gifts. Saying he heard that a small matter had happened in our manor, so came to visit with this purpose in mind. In fact, we all know that His Highness Prince Jin for sure came here in order to see you. Let’s go, why waste your time with a good-for-nothing. We should go see His Highness Prince Jin now without delay.”

Su Jingyu disdainfully swept Su Luo a glance, then he pulled Su Qing away and

left immediately.

Now, even though Su Qing's face was still as cold as frost as before, however, her eyebrows and eyes were hanging low, giving off a nervous, bewildered and bashful appearance. No matter how you look, she resembled a young lady yearning for love. Where would she still have a little bit of the manner of an ice beauty.

Seeing older brother pulling second older sister along as they quickly left, a touch of resentment flashed through Su Xi's eyes.

His Highness Prince Jin, how could His Highness, that kind of god, start to like second older sister? Even though second older sister was indeed very good, but... originally, she thought that because she was marrying the crown prince she would be the happiest and most noble woman in the world. However, compared to His Highness Prince Jin, the position of an imperial concubine for the crown prince seemed to be of little value or interest.

If she was able to choose, of course she would also choose His Highness Prince Jin!

But, everyone knew that His Highness Prince Jin and the Jade Lake's fairy was a couple. How could he all of sudden fall for second older sister?

No matter how much Su Xi pondered, she was unable to understand. The more she thought about it, the more unreconciled she become. Finally, she hatefully glared at Su Luo and loudly cursed: "Blockhead! His Highness Prince Jin treats second older sister with deep devotion, totally infatuated. In a few days' time, second older sister will become Princess Jin. You must be dying from envy! Humph!"

Su Luo, with her hand on her chin in a thoughtful posture, she thoughtfully watched the pair of brother and sister as they gradually walked further away. Then, she swept a ridiculing glaze at Su Xi who was in front of her.

This matter would indeed be extremely interesting.

Through the disturbance Beichen Ying made last time, Su Qing had actually really believed that Nangong Liuyun harbored feelings for her? According to her interaction with Nangong Liuyun in the past few days, she never saw even a little

bit of association between him and Su Qing. He simply didn't even ever bother to mentioned her.

Inside this zigzagging misunderstanding, it was indeed extremely amusing. If Su Qing knew that this was actually merely a mishap created by Beichen Ying, that indeed was...really looking forward to the fast change on her face.

Su Luo thought up to here and couldn't help uttering a 'pfff' sound of laughter.

Su Xi incredulously glared at Su Luo, using a looking-at-a-lunatic expression to glare at her: "You, such an idiot! Why are you foolishly giggling? Don't tell me you are not jealous or envious. That is His Highness Prince Jin, His Highness Prince Jin ah! Which girl in this entire world doesn't dream of being married to His Highness Prince Jin? You are still actually laughing? You are indeed an idiot."

## Chapter 310 – Returning to Su Manor (10)

---

Su Luo leisurely cast a glance at her: “Aren’t you fooling around with the crown prince right now? What, you also fell for His Highness Prince Jin?” Didn’t expect Nangong Liuyun, that guy, would have so many fans. Look, the little Lolita in front of her had the crown prince as a fiancé but was still his devoted fan.

Su Xi’s complexion became stiff, slanting her face away in annoyance: “Shut up! I’m not going to speak to you! Humph!”

After a heavy snort, Su Xi picked up her skirt, turned around and was about to leave.

“Just like this, you are leaving? Not going to drink a cup of tea before leaving?” Su Luo asked coldly at her figure from the back.

Su Xi turned around and heavily glared at Su Luo, she then turned back furiously and left with large strides.

Even second older sister was gone, if she didn’t go, what could she do by staying behind? She couldn’t even beat her in a fight! This really could make her die from fury. When did this good-for-nothing’s strength already surpass hers?

Su Xi decided that once she returned, she would go into seclusion and cultivate properly. Next time, she must beat Su Luo until not even a disk of armor was left. To weaken and kill her drive.

Su Xi, the leader, had already left, what were the remaining people still staying behind for? The herd of people following close behind ashamedly fled in defeat.

Su Xi was walking angrily, suddenly, she returned to her senses and hatefully glared at the servants behind her. Her pale finger pointed at them: “You guys,

remember this from this Miss! Today's matter, nobody is allowed to mention it! If even one person was to spread it outside..."

Today, she was simply disgraced all the way to her maternal grandmother's home!

The herd of servants were all like yes-man. with their head shrinking back and nodding, indicating that they would not spread it out.

Xiao Yu covered the smothering pain from her chest, in a low voice, asked: "Miss, the matter of the fourth Miss knowing martial arts...This matter would be hard to conceal, right?"

"Humph! If she had wanted to go in front of daddy to be awarded for her achievement, she would already have told him, why should she wait until now? You guys, remember this from me, the matter of her knowing martial arts, nobody is allowed to mention!" Since Su Luo, this slut, wouldn't say it herself, then wasn't it just perfect?

"Yes, yes, yes." The herd of servants hastily nodded their heads.

The fifth Miss, when handling matters, was ruthless and unreasonable. Her methods were cruel and she kept her word, who would dare to disobey her commands.

Speaking of the reception hall.

On top of the chair, at the master's position up high, Nangong Liuyun sat upright and tall. Evidently, he was holding a teacup made of white jade in his hand, unhurriedly tasting the tea.

And below, Su Zian and the others sat in fear and trepidation, keeping him company. Under this oppressive atmosphere, nobody dared to even breathe out heavily.

Even though in the beginning, Su Zian learned from Beichen Ying's mouth that His Highness Prince Jin was interested in his family's Qing'er, however, he had merely smiled and didn't take it seriously. Yet, he didn't expect that it would be true. His Highness Prince Jin, who had never visited Su Manor, unexpectedly brought gifts while dropping in.

**His Highness Prince, would actually visit the home of a state official...If this was spread out, who would believe it?**

**Su Zian trembled with fear as he took a quick peek at His Highness Prince Jin. Seeing his pair of enigmatic eyes, with the corner of his mouth perked up slightly, he was clearly in a pretty good mood. With this glance, Su Zian also felt reassured.**

**Nangong Liuyun leisurely drank a mouthful of tea, his phoenix eyes narrowed slightly. He cast Su Zian a faint glance: "The Great General Su has good fortune, such a spectacular and splendid good daughter, in the nation of Eastern Ling, how many people wouldn't envy you."**

**His Luo girl was not only gifted enough to astonish people, in addition, she was also a wood and fire dual system Apothecary. An Elementary Apothecary that could refine Intermediate level medicinal pills, a genius that was difficult to encounter in a millennium. This still said nothing of her being a space mage that had been lost on this continent for a long time. Every item in this pile, just randomly picking one to go out was enough to amaze and make people awestruck. And his Luo girl gathered all these advantages into a single person.**

**Really, having such a daughter, on this earth, whose fortune was better when compared to Su Zian's?**

# Chapter 311 – Returning to Su Manor (11)

---

How could Su Zian think of the so-called daughter from His Highness Prince Jin's mouth being Su Luo?

In his eyes, Su Luo was merely an abandoned good-for-nothing. Therefore, when Nangong Liuyun said this sentence, the first person who appeared in his mind was Su Qing.

Bright rays of light flashed through Su Zian's pair of eyes. He humbly smiled, accompanying him while saying: "Your Highness's praise is erroneous. Although that girl's gift is pretty good, however, compared to Your Highness's, she is merely like the dust on the ground, basically unable to be compared to you."

"Oh?" Nangong Liuyun was surprised.

This Su Zian and the Liu family's Elder Ancestor had one point that was really similar. They were both strict in treating other people but lenient towards themselves.

Luo girl's gifted talent, in his eyes, would actually become mere dust on the ground? He himself, at his old age, was no more than a minor fifth rank. He actually still didn't consider Luo girl's gift at the apex of talents as worthy?

If others were to say this about his talent, he absolutely wouldn't pay it any attention, but disrespecting his Luo girl, a touch of frost momentarily flashed through his pair of beautiful, vibrant and bright eyes.

The two people were totally unaware that they were talking at cross purposes. The person they were talking about simply was not the same person.

Su Zian, completely lacking any awareness, seeing that His Highness not batting an eyelid while fiddling with the teacup, was still under the impression

that he spoke correctly. And he still continued to talk non-stop in a self-deprecating manner: “That girl, it is also thanks to her good luck. At a very young age, she paid her respects to a good teacher, otherwise, she also wouldn’t have her current achievements. However, these accomplishments, compared to your Highness’s, falls far too short, the distance is too far...”

Nangong Liuyun frowned with displeasure. She paid respects to a good teacher? When did his Luo’er formally become an apprentice to a master? Why was it he didn’t know? Which master was it? Was the master a male or female? Was the master good-looking or not?

Sure enough, men’s IQ, when caught in the snare of love, were all unlikely to be very high, including His Highness Prince Jin. He immediately overlooked everything else and made a beeline for the main subject, becoming entangled in the question of Su Luo’s teacher.

He was just about to ask when the rushing sounds of footsteps came from outside the door. Right after, Su Jingyu’s face that was full of smiles emerged.

“It has already come to this, why still be so bashful? Stop dawdling, quickly come in.” Su Jingyu, with one step, entered the hall, but discovered that today’s female lead, his treasured second younger sister Su Qing, had fallen behind. He turned his head for a look and just so happened to see the spreading crimson on Su Qing’s little face from modesty. Therefore, he urged her on with a laughing expression.

Qing’er this girl, had always been cold and cheerless by nature, but once His Highness Prince Jin was mentioned, she would change entirely into a bashful young lady. It could clearly be seen how great His Highness Prince Jin’s charisma and allure was.

Su Qing nodded her head, controlling the colors on her face, she gave a clear cough. She forcibly retrieved the bashfulness from her face, only after that did she lower her head and drop her eyes to enter the hall.

Once Su Qing entered, Su Zian finally exhaled a breath of air from nervousness.

Okay, good, good, with Qing’er present, His Highness Prince Jin’s attention would certainly not be placed on his body right? Su Zian relaxed a little and

wiped away the cold sweat that he wasn't sure when, had climbed out onto his forehead.

However Su Qing's speed was somewhat slow. She took small quick steps, every step seemingly giving birth to a lotus flower, with the posture of a graceful woman swaying gently towards His Highness Prince Jin. Though her movements seemed a little stiff from nervousness.

Within the reception hall.

Madam Su, Su Zian, and including Su Jingyu, the three people all had smiles at the corner of their mouth when watching Su Qing. This girl was normally very cold and pure. Now at last, she also knew how to be bashful? It ought to be this way.

The smile on Madam Su's face was even more magnificent. Her smiling face was like a flower. She was extremely pleased with the current state of affairs.

Su Xi being able to climb up to the crown prince's high branch already made her very happy. Now. Su Qing's ticket, compared to Su Xi was even more of a victory. She unexpectedly made His Highness Prince Jin feel anxious and infatuated because of her, thus consenting to lowering his noble image to pay his respects by coming to Su Manor.

## Chapter 312 – Returning to Su Manor (12)

---

Madam Su secretly thought with delight: She was definitely the daughter she gave birth to, as expected, extraordinarily charismatic.

All the people present had their betting gaze on Su Qing's body. She paid no attention to the bystander's gazes, but.... Su Qing covertly raised her eyes to look at Nangong Liuyun.

Seeing his pair of beautiful, black as ink eyes staring at herself, the crimson color she had curbed with great difficulty, with one brush once again appeared on top of her fair face. The sudden contrast of bashfulness against her skin repeatedly appearing was as gorgeous as the blooming cherry blossoms in March.

When Su Zian saw Su Qing's bashful, taciturn little appearance, he immediately started to laugh openly: "Ha ha ha, Qing'er, quickly come over to meet His Highness Prince Jin."

Su Qing bent her knees with eyes lowered, curtsying daintily towards His Highness Prince Jin: "Meeting with His Highness Prince Jin."

Nangong Liuyun's clear gaze cast her a shallow glance, his profoundly mysterious phoenix eyes narrowed slightly. Then he casually said, "Rise."

Nobody minded His Highness Prince Jin's coldness, they all felt it was very normal. Moreover, they also felt his manner was unusually amiable.

Madam Su smilingly looked at the people in front of her like a pair of jade annulus. The male was extremely handsome, the female was incomparably beautiful, they simply were an ideal couple, a match made in heaven. There wasn't anyone else that was even more suited. Good, good, it was really indeed exceedingly good.

The corner of Madam Su's mouth started to split open, her face had such a

pleased smile that no matter what, she couldn't suppress it. It was truly like a mother-in-law watching her son-in-law, the more she looked, the more satisfied she became.

Su Zian unceasingly cast meaningful glances at Su Qing. Su Qing knew that this was her father signaling her to be on more intimate terms with His Highness Prince Jin. However, they simply were not that familiar. His Highness Prince Jin came for a visit, shouldn't it be him that took the initiative? How could they ask her to do it? Truly shaming a person to death.

She furtively shot a glance at His Highness Prince Jin, and saw his matchless handsome and eminent face which was like a Greek god of war. There was still his pair of eyes that was brighter than the stars, from its depths radiated faint rays of resplendent light. It revealed a peerless and exceptionally proud expression...

That she could be adored by this kind of man, it truly was good fortune accumulated from many of her lifetimes.

Never mind, since he took the initiative to come to her door, then she also ought to take the initiative to respond back, as was proper. After all, His Highness Prince Jin was someone from high above her, that he was able to come to her door was already way beyond her expectations.

Su Qing's heart was being very bashful, naturally. a little of it also appeared on her face. She shyly stepped forward and took the teapot. She poured tea into the white jade teacup that His Highness Prince Jin had set aside on the table, "Your Highness, the tea in the manor naturally is not as good as the ones in Prince Jin's Royal Manor. Please pardon its quality a bit."

Nangong Liuyun once again cast Su Qing a glance and with an indifferent tone, said: "Put it down, go sit on the side."

This woman was Luo girl's sibling, right? Alas, marrying Luo girl was really not easy. He still needed to restrain his temper and endure feigning civility with these random people. Nangong Liuyun thought somewhat impatiently.

Yet, when Su Zian saw this, his heart was elated. Yes, yes, sure enough, His Highness Prince Jin definitely had deep feelings and intention towards Qing'er. See, ever since His Highness entered the residence, he was the most pleasant

towards Su Qing. He even granted her a seat, all these were sufficient to prove everything.

Before, Madam was still worried that what the Venerable Beichen had said was nonsense. Now, gathered together, it should not be false right? Thinking up to here, Su Zian raised a smug eyebrow at Madam Su. Madam Su pursed her lips and smiled, secretly nodding.

The husband and wife pair made eyes with each other under the gazes of everyone present. All of this was seen by Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun frowned with some annoyance.

Rumor has it that the natural disposition of the Great General that protected the nation was solemn, dignified and cold. Who could have anticipated that he would be this frivolous?

In addition, there was that Su Qing something, one heard that she was very noble and coldly elegant. However, just now from what he saw, how was she different from those starry-eyed, infatuated, idiotic women that were outside?

## Chapter 313 – Returning to Su Manor (13)

---

Su Jingyu took note of His Highness Prince Jin's expression, and immediately gave off a distinct coughing sound in an attempt to divert his attention, "Your Highness Prince Jin is too polite. You bringing along these gifts is enough even as a bride's gift. If other people do not know, they would think you came to our home to bring the betrothal gifts. Ha ha ha."

Su Jingyu saw that His Highness Prince Jin promptly stared at him unblinkingly, all of a sudden, he felt a little awkward and gave a forced smile.

Once he finished speaking, he became aware that his words were simply too rash.

Who was His Highness Prince Jin? Was his affair something he could just randomly say? Having thought of this, Su Jingyu immediately quivered from head to toe in fear. He had a terrified expression at once, nearly kneeling down.

Who would have imagined that once Nangong Liuyun heard it, not only was he not displeased, on the contrary, his dark red lips tilted up, carrying a touch of a smile. It also had a bit of hidden bitterness as it released a sigh: "Those words you said, this king likes to hear. Only, it's a pity that even if this king brought over a mountain of gold and silver as bridal gifts, that certain person would also not agree."

His Luo girl was indeed very hard to pursue. He also didn't know how far he still had to walk on this road to chase after his wife before he could hug a beautiful wife. Sometimes, when he thought about this, he truly wished he could just kidnap her to his home and let it be.

Su Jingyu never expected that His Highness Prince Jin would let out such a sigh. Immediately, he started to plan and thought deeply, soon after, he thought he understood. He smiled very amusingly: "Your Highness, you are thinking too

much. On this earth, how can there be a person who won't agree to marrying you. Qing'er, what do you say?"

Originally, because of the sentence about bridal gifts from just a moment ago, Su Qing's state of mind was disordered. Then, encountering Su Jingyu's question, her eyes dropped low from shy modesty. Her voice was soft as mosquito: "Yes...I, I, I agree."

Saying this, a cloud of red flew onto her face, both hands nervously crossed and uncrossed. She bashfully lowered her head, simply not daring to raise her head.

Once Su Qing said these words, Su Zian and the other members were immediately so happy that they nearly flew up, especially Su Zian. He burst into loud, happy laughter, he laughed to his heart's content.

His Highness Prince Jin took a fancy to his Qing'er, surely very quickly, she would become Princess Jin. It looked like very quickly, his position would shift up once more, he was indeed very happy.

Nangong Liuyun's hearing ability was really good, no matter how soft Su Qing said it, it was impossible for him not to hear. Only, he was somewhat unclear why this young lady would abruptly have a brain seizure to speak out to agree or not agree with these words. It was not like the person he wanted to marry was her.

Did the brains of everyone in Su Manor seized up? Could it be that aside from his Luo girl, there wasn't another normal person?

He was still a Great General that protected the nation, how could a person with brain seizure protect the country? Looked like this position must be moved around a little.

Nangong Liuyun, having waited, had become a little impatient. He had always handled matters as he pleased, absolutely unrestrained. Today, him being able to restrain his temper to wait in Su Manor's reception hall, was all because of his Luo girl. Because these were the people from her family, therefore, his temper was able to endure enough for him to sit there peacefully.

However, having waited for a while and still not seeing his Luo girl despite all

this waiting, Nangong Liuyun was suddenly annoyed. His pair of remote and cold phoenix eyes swept towards Su Zian. “General Su, where is the person this king wanted to see? Why is she still not here yet?”

Once these words were spoken, Su Zian’s joyful laughter suddenly came to an end. He somewhat bewilderedly looked at His Highness Prince Jin. After a long time, he finally came to his senses: “Your, Your Highness, isn’t Qing’er already standing in front of you?”

Nangong Liuyun’s sword-like eyebrows knotted coldly, letting out a cold snort in displeasure: “Qing’er? What kind of thing is it? Does it have any relation to the person this king wanted to see?”

Once these words were spoken!

Immediately, all the people present became cold and respectful, everyone inhaled a mouthful of cold air. Without exception, they all stared blankly at Nangong Liuyun with a disbelieving, stupefied expression— —

## Chapter 314 – Returning to Su Manor (14)

---

However, in a split second, Su Qing's complexion became deathly white. Wherefore would she still have a trace of bashfulness? That pair of clear, cold and beautiful eyes were opened wide, rigidly staring at His Highness Prince Jin. Her eyes were full of disbelief.

“What, what are you saying? The person your Highness wanted to see, isn't it Qing'er?” The corner of Su Zian's mouth stiffened, muttering the words.

He felt his own brain going completely blank. He was as stiff as an iron rod, simply incapable of thinking anymore.

Nangong Liuyun harshly tossed the teacup onto the table, with a frown he coldly said: “This king doesn't care about your Qing'er or Zhuo'er (1). Do you still remember what this king said before?”

“Your Highness said, ‘you should call your daughter to come over’...” Su Zian rigidly recalled, only he found that his brain's reaction was very slow, it was wooden and blank.

“In that case, what was it that you did?” Nangong Liuyun impatiently berated, “The person this king wanted to see is a certain young lady in your home. You called over a random, starry-eyed, infatuated flower to deal with this king? Su Zian, you have great courage.”

Disordered, random, flower, starry-eyed infatuated? Su Qing's normally pale face immediately became so white as to lack all color. Her body was as stiff as iron, like a wooden board sticking out from a pile, unmoving.

His Highness Prince Jin had actually said she was starry-eyed and infatuated... starry-eyed and infatuated...

These two words circled around in Su Qing's mind uninterrupted, they

expanded then magnified endlessly, and again they enlarged...

Su Jingyu and Madam Su were also stupefied. They foolishly and blankly stared at His Highness Prince Jin. Seeing His Highness's anger, even a trace of chill appeared in their hearts .

Su Jingyu summoned up his courage and trembled uncontrollably as he asked: "Your, Your Highness, isn't Qing'er the person you wanted to see? Aren't you and Qing'er..."

"Are we what?" A frosty light flashed through Nangong Liuyun's eyes.

Su Jingyu nervously swallowed some saliva, at last summoning his courage, he asked in a whisper: "The person you want to marry...Could it be she isn't Qing'er?"

Having heard what was said, Nangong Liuyun at first was startled, then he was once again irritated.

With a ridiculing and sarcastic manner, he pointed at Su Qing, saying in genuine disbelief: "Are you all insane? Bringing this kind of starry-eyed, infatuated idiot to be placed on equal terms with this king? In you people's eyes, this king is just like a blind person? Su Zian! You have great courage!"

Having heard these words, Su Zian didn't have the mind to bother with other stuff, as he immediately kneeled in fear and trepidation: "Your Highness, please calm down, Your Highness, please calm down ah! It was all because this useless person is ignorant. Having heard some nonsense from outside, and just took it as truth. I hope Your Highness will be magnanimous, you must by all means calm down."

Momentarily, Su Qing's entire person was stupefied.

If was said that just a moment ago she still had a little delusion regarding His Highness Prince Jin, then now, her beautiful dream was thoroughly smashed into pieces. Moreover, it would never be put back together.

She thought it over countless times, no matter what, she could not imagine that in His Highness Prince Jin's eyes, unexpectedly, she was this kind of person....starry-eyed, infatuated, idiot, a waste...Weren't these labels belonging exclusively to Su Luo? How did it get stuck onto her body?

Su Qing wanted to cry, but found her own brain dazed and stunned, not even one tear would fall out. She merely felt stupid and stood there blankly. The surrounding atmosphere made her feel suffocated, it was so oppressive that she nearly fainted.

She stupidly stared at His Highness Prince Jin, whereas the receiving party regarded her as a pair of worn out shoes. In his eyes, she was actually nothing... But just a moment ago, she still was hoping that this callous, fickle man would love her at first sight.

Ha ha, she really was too stupid and had too high an opinion of herself. This kind of man, why would he stop and stay because of a woman? How could it be possible!

Nangong Liuyun stingily didn't even glance at Su Qing, his indifferent expression swept towards Su Zian.

*1) Qing'er or Zhuo'er – is a play on words. Qing in Chinese is clear while Zhuo is Chinese for turbid/muddy.*

# Chapter 315 – Returning to Su Manor (15)

---

This glance, although cursory, yet it frightened Su Zian's heart and made him jumpy beyond flustered.

Su Zian urgently bellowed at Su Jingyu in fury: "Why are you still staring blankly? Go and fetch all of your younger sisters now without delay!"

Su Jingyu had a somewhat stupefied look with a complicated expression. He silently took a quick glance at His Highness Prince Jin, lowering his voice to nervously ask: "Who should I fetch?"

"All of them!" Su Zian saw His Highness Prince Jin sipped a mouthful of tea with his indifferent expression. This made his heart all the more terrified. God knows once this Yama, King of Hell, was annoyed and provoked, what kind of crazy stuff he would do?

Su Jingyu muttered apprehensively to himself: "Is this necessary? Isn't just asking fifth younger sister to come fine?"

In any case, Su Wan was already a fallen woman and Su Luo was basically a good-for-nothing, what's the point of asking these two to come?

Su Zian saw His Highness Prince Jin frown, and he panicked. The palm of his hand hit towards Su Jingyu's forehead, while angrily roaring: "I ordered you to go, so you should quickly scam for your daddy!" While speaking, Su Zian heavily kicked towards Su Jingyu's ass and directly kicked him out the door.

Su Jingyu massaged his thoroughly aching buttocks. He had a gloomy and malicious expression, extremely unhappy, but regardless of his mood, His Highness Prince Jin was still sitting in the reception hall. None of them could afford to offend him.

If they caused His Highness Prince Jin to be unhappy, Su Manor's entire

residence would be wiped out to disappear in the vastness of history. This was also not something that was hard to imagine. After all, it wasn't like His Highness Prince Jin hadn't done something like this before.

Alas, the pitiful second younger sister, heartfully studying for such a long time, in the end it was all wasted effort. Ultimately, she still let fifth younger sister take the cheap advantage right? Only the fifth younger sister...Su Jingyu was once again tangled.

Fifth younger sister and the crown prince already had a vague relationship, father and the emperor also already reached an understanding. Within the next few days, the imperial edict would arrive to grant them the marriage. Now, His Highness Prince Jin came to make this move, catching them completely unprepared. This also made it difficult for them to choose.

In addition, there was still His Highness the crown prince...Su Jingyu fidgeted as he kneaded his throbbing and jumping temple.

Even though he himself felt that His Highness Prince Jin was someone the crown prince was unable to reach, however on the surface, he was clearly still a man on the crown prince's side.

The crown prince also hated His Highness Prince Jin, to the point of gnashing his teeth. He and His Highness Prince Jin could not coexist. This point was one he understood clearly better than anybody. However now, this situation... just thinking about it would give anyone a headache.

At once, Su Jingyu subconsciously determined that the person His Highness Prince Jin wanted to see was Su Xi.

Because from his point of view, Su Wan's body was already ruined, in this lifetime, it was impossible for her to turn it around. As for Su Luo, she was simply an idiotic good-for-nothing. Even he wouldn't glance at her, let alone His Highness Prince Jin's type of god from the ninth layer of heaven, okay?

If he was to bring Su Luo in front of His Highness Prince Jin, that would be dirtying His Highness's eyes.

However, even though Su Jingyu was very unwilling to ask Su Luo, while following Su Zian's command from before, he had no choice but to go and ask.

Consequently, he instructed two servants to go and invite Su Wan and Su Luo. He personally strolled towards the courtyard Su Xi resided in.

“Bang——！”The crisp sound of porcelain hitting the ground echoed within the room.

Again, it was followed by the sharply clear, crackling and rattling sounds of things smashing to the ground. Hearing it made a person’s heart panic and body jump in fright.

Su Jingyu’s eyebrow knotted slightly, he had an annoyed expression, so with quick steps, he walked inside. When he saw the scene inside, his sword-like eyebrows wrinkled into the Chinese character 川.

Now on the ground inside the room, were broken pieces and fragments of porcelain. Every kind of thing that could be smashed was all smashed, even the table, chairs and furniture were all shattered into pieces. It almost looked like it had gone through a large earthquake.

“Su Xi, why are you again throwing a fit of anger?” Su Jingyu glared at Su Xi with extreme displeasure.

## Chapter 316 – Returning to Su Manor (16)

---

Now, the whole family was messed with by His Highness Prince Jin until they were in terrible shape. And she was still here smashing antique and chinaware to vent her feelings. What did you call this?

Su Xi turned her head around to glare hatefully at Su Jingyu, she fumingly said: “You, leave me alone! You go and kiss up to second older sister! She will be flying up to the top branch in the position of the phoenix! All of you should go fawn up to her, that will be good. Why come to look for me!”

Su Xi was pampered and spoiled since childhood by Madam Su and other enabler. She had always been unable to hold back her words, all of her emotions would be displayed on her face.

Merely hearing her words, Su Jingyu immediately understood. It turned out this girl was drinking Qing'er's vinegar. Unfortunately, this girl didn't realize how difficult Qing'er's situation was right now.

Su Jingyu, with both arms crossed, coldly cast a glance at Su Xi: “She is your second older sister, if she can be Princess Jin, our entire family will rise along with her like the tides. Besides, aren't you and the crown prince exchanging flirting glances? You can become the crown prince's imperial concubine and still not content?”

“Before His Highness Prince Jin appeared, the crown prince is not bad, but now, how can the crown prince compare to His Highness Prince Jin? Can he? Older brother, you use your own conscience and speak, can he?”

Su Xi was very forceful, drawing closer step by step, a pair of almond-shaped eyes glaring until they was huge. Both of her cheeks were puffed up, giving off a panting with rage appearance.

“You are such a bad girl, indeed really crafty and unruly.” Su Jingyu poked

her forehead and took her hand, "All right, come walk with older brother."

"Where to?" Su Xi clearly was unhappy, with one move she shook off his hand.

"Reception hall, a certain someone wants to see you." Su Jingyu's smile was somewhat enigmatic.

"Not going!" Su Xi fumingly sat on the headboard of her bed while hugging the bed's pillar with her head leaning on it, "I'm not going! Not happy going! Not willing to go! Who likes it, is who should go!"

"Oh? Really not going?" Su Jingyu felt that teasing this little girl was extremely amusing. The messy chaos in his heart was swept clean. In any case, whether it was Qing'er or Xi'er, both of them were his younger sisters, moreover, both of them liked His Highness Prince Jin. It was better that he as their older brother to not control so much.

"Yeah, don't want to go. Older brother, go quickly, quickly go. Just seeing you irritates me!" Su Xi impatiently waved her hand.

Su Jingyu lifted his foot and was just about to leave. When he walked to the doorway, he unhurriedly gave a sigh: "Alas, His Highness Prince Jin doesn't want such an outstanding Qing'er, how could he have fallen for you, such a bad girl? Really incomprehensible for people. Fine, since you won't go..."

"Ah, ah, ahhhh!!!" Su Xi immediately jumped up about a meter high, her head knocked against the bed pillar. It hurt so much that tears were about to come out.

However, she simply did not have the time to deal with the pain. She threw herself directly towards Su Jingyu. Her face was so excited that the muscles were trembling: "Older, older brother! What did you say just now? What was it that you said?"

"Nothing, I didn't say anything." Su Jingyu spread out both hands and innocently shrugged his shoulders.

"Older brother!!!" Both of Su Xi's hands clutched towards Su Jingyu's neck. She looked fierce and feigning anger, said: "Quickly speak, quickly speak, you want me to go mad from being so worked up!"

**Su Jingyu somewhat helplessly let out a sigh.**

**How could His Highness Prince Jin have such great charisma and allure?**

**These girls from his family, everyday, each and every one of them was aloof, icily arrogant, high and mighty to an extreme. They wouldn't buy anyone's account, but once they come across His Highness Prince Jin, every single one of them would curl up like a little kitten that was exceedingly cute and well-behaved.**

**Sure enough, that phrase was said correctly. Seeing His Highness Prince Jin, they would avoid previously arranged marriages.**

**In fact, it wasn't only these girls, even Father, Mother and including him, would also not dare to breathe heavily in front of His Highness Prince Jin, right?**

**It was clear, there was a type of people, at birth, their body had a kind of charisma that would make people acknowledge and serve them.**

## Chapter 317 – Returning to Su Manor (17)

---

“Older brother! If you don’t tell me then I’ll choke you to death!!!” Su Xi’s face was sullen, glaring very fiercely at Su Jingyu. She was so anxious that black smoke was nearly coming out of her forehead.

Su Jingyu helplessly let out a sigh: “Okay, okay, older brother won’t tease you anymore. His Highness Prince Jin really didn’t fall for Qing’er. Everything from before was a misunderstanding. But the only thing that is certain, is that His Highness Prince Jin really took a fancy to a young lady from our residence.”

Every sentence Su Jingyu said, the light in Su Xi’s eyes would shine a little more. She was so excited that her little face was the crimson color of blood, her lips were trembling non-stop.

Su Jingyu spoilingly and indulgently rubbed her head, he continued to speak: “You tell me, in our home apart, from Qing’er and you, who else is there? That is to say, since Qing’er has already been eliminated, therefore the only possibility is you, now do you understand?”

Su Xi was dumbfounded. She was stupefied for a long time before regaining her senses. The corner of her mouth cracked open into a smile. Her smile got larger and larger, more and more brilliant...It appeared as if she was so happy she became an idiot.

“Older brother, are you telling the truth? Prince Jin really fell for me? He really wants me to become Princess Jin? Oh heavens!!!” Right now, Su Xi’s heart was bursting in joy, she felt that the entire sky was sunny and cloudless. The whole world all of a sudden became beautiful.

“Of course, apart from you, who else is there?” Su Jingyu said, full of zest.

As far as he was concerned, these two younger sisters, no matter who became Princess Jin, he would receive the same benefit.

**“Oh heavens, oh heavens~~The Gods are too good to me right? Oh heavens!!!” Su Xi happily laughed in elation. She continuously twirled around in circles inside her room, so excited that she nearly went insane.**

**“Ouch——”All of a sudden, a burst of miserable yell came from Su Xi’s mouth. Right after, her whole body twisted and fell to the ground. The ground was covered in broken pieces and fragments of chinaware she had thrown. Immediately, her entire butt was pricked full of numerous cuts, fresh blood seeping out.**

**“Little Xi——”Su Jingyu, with an aching heart, pulled her up with a solemn expression as he scolded her: “You, this girl, how can you be so careless? Does it hurt?”**

**Su Xi was still smiling, she was smiling and grinning from ear to ear. She hurriedly waved her hand and said: “Doesn’t hurt, doesn’t hurt, it didn’t hurt a bit. Hee, hee, hee——”**

**“You, this girl. kept smiling until you are stupid.” Su Jingyu exasperatedly poked at her forehead.**

**“Hee, hee, hee——” Su Xi, with one hand, pushed Su Jingyu away and turned around to immediately run towards the outside door, “Older brother I’m going to go see His Highness Prince Jin, take your time.”**

**“Hey—— Little Xi, wait for me!” Su Jingyu called out loudly. However, before waiting for him to turn around, even the shadow of Su Xi’s figure was already gone.**

**Su Jingyu could only helplessly shake his head.**

**Seeing Su Xi looking like this, Su Jingyu secretly sighed in his heart. His Highness Prince Jin had rejected Qing’er, not sure if this was a good thing or not.**

**Speaking of Su Xi, she ran so fast, she was like a wisp of smoke and fast as lightning as she rushed towards the reception hall.**

**Standing outside of the door, Su Xi very firmly inhaled a breath of air. She calmed down her excited frame of mind. Only then did she purse her lips and cover up the happy expression at the corner of her eye, and strolled right in.**

When Su Zian and Madam Su saw Su Xi enter, their hearts were especially complicated. Both of them gazed towards Su Xi with a troubled, heart-aching expression.

Su Qing's pair of beautiful eyes rigidly glared at the approaching Su Xi, who was swaying gently with a womanly grace. That pair of eyes was as cold as a millennium old block of ice, and also like a thousand layers of the edges of icy blades. If her gaze could kill people, the Su Xi right now would have already died a million times.

Taking note of Su Qing's hateful and jealous gaze, Su Xi raised an eyebrow and slanted her a glance.

Humph, since childhood, second older sister's gift, compared to hers, was always better. Even more, at such a young age, she had also paid her respects to a great teacher. If she hadn't returned, then it was tolerable, but once she returned, she immediately snatched away all the attention and the gazes that belonged to her. She still believed that she was a real peacock spreading its tail and that everyone would like her!

## Chapter 318 – Returning to Su Manor (18)

---

Humph, since His Highness Prince Jin liked her, let her be jealous! Su Xi, who had always secretly hated Su Qing, now seemed to have made a comeback. She completely ignored Su Qing's feelings, on the contrary, the more painful it was for her, the more comfortable Su Xi's heart would be.

Originally, a pair of blood sisters from the same father and mother normally was also on the same page in a very close relationship. However, because of one guy, animosity was born in the hearts of this pair of sisters.

Su Xi swayed gently with glowing beauty as she moved in front of Prince Jin and made her salutations cutely.

Nangong Liuyun indifferently continued to drink his tea, basically giving no indication that he even noticed her.

Su Xi's heart became anxious, didn't older brother say His Highness Prince Jin was interested in her? How could he have this kind of attitude? Could it be that older brother had guessed wrong?

No, it's not like this! It absolutely could not be like this! His Highness Prince Jin belonged to her!

Su Xi hastened to squeeze out a trace of a smile on her stiff face. She cutely and kitten-like sashayed to in front of His Highness Prince Jin. She reached out her slender pale hand, wanting to hold His Highness Prince Jin's hand——

However——

Before you know it, one could only see the flash of a shadow and Su Xi's figure was already hit all the way out the door. After a long while, a distant miserable shriek of pain could be heard from outside.

Su Zian, Madam Su, Su Jingyu and also Su Qing, now, all of their eyes were

opened very wide. They all stared in shock at that figure that was sent flying, and they were speechless for a very long time.

Madam Su was very worried about the condition of Su Xi's injury. However, with His Highness Prince Jin present, everyone in the reception hall was enveloped in his qi field. She basically wouldn't even dare to breathe loudly,, not to mention even leaving here halfway through.

But, His Highness Prince Jin actually...He unexpectedly hit Su Xi, directly sending her flying out...This simply was...

Yet, Nangong Liuyun was still unperturbed without a ripple and took another sip of tea. His tone was like the ice in a deep pool, ice-cold to the bone: "Su Zian, you birthed a good daughter ah."

Su Zian's heart suddenly sank to the ground. He knew that this enigmatic and impossible to predict His Highness Prince Jin, in front of his eyes, was already getting a little angry.

Only, no matter what, he couldn't guess right. His Highness Prince Jin descended on Su Manor and kept on saying he wanted to see he, Su Zian's daughter. But Qing'er was refused, Xi'er was sent flying, in the end, who was it he wanted to see! Was giving a hint too much to ask?

Su Zian was simply about to be overwrought from being pressed too hard.

"Your Highness...Are you perhaps mistaken?" Su Zian forced himself to step forward to reply, "Since Qing'er and Xi'er both are not the person you wanted to find, then that young lady you are looking for definitely is not in my home. Still hope that Your Highness Prince Jin investigates it thoroughly."

Nangong Liuyun leisurely took a sip of tea, in a calm and composed manner, he spoke, "Su Zian, are you blaming this king for coming to your residence to make trouble without reason?"

His tone was like a soothing cloud and a gentle wind, downplaying every word, but for Su Zian's ears which heard these words, it seemed like a scorching thunderous lightning that was violently exploding in his mind. Su Zian knew that His Highness Prince Jin was displeased.

However, these words of his were obviously spoken with good intentions. Why

was it that His Highness still wasn't happy? This left him at a total loss.

The pitiful him simply did not know, because he had inadvertently eliminated Su Luo, he was therefore confronted with a man who was now offended on Su Luo's behalf because he always became narrow-minded when it came to Su Luo.

Su Zian hurriedly tried to explain himself: "Your Highness, this person really isn't trying to find fault with you. Rather, to tell you the truth, this person really only has these two daughters, and won't ever be able to find the person you are looking for."

Nangong Liuyun still gracefully sat there drinking tea, a chilliness flashed through his black eyes. He said a sentence with a tone that was light as a feather: "Su Zian ah, Su Zian, you, such a person, does not know when you are well off. This lifetime, I'm afraid you will carry a lifelong regret."

## Chapter 319 – Returning to Su Manor (19)

---

“Huh?” Su Zian completely did not understand the meaning in the sentence that His Highness Prince Jin just said. He looked at Nangong Liuyun with a perplexed expression, hoping that Prince Jin would say something to make it clearer.

Nangong Liuyun peacefully sat there, the joint in his fingers could be seen as he lightly pushed away the floating tea leaves inside the teacup with the lid. His eyes dropped slightly contentedly, saying: “You really just gave birth to only these two daughters that are wastes?”

Nangong Liuyun’s tone which was light as a feather even carried a touch of smile, but in Su Zian’s ears, when he heard these words, it made his soul shudder from the frost.

Prince Jin called Su Qing and Su Xi wastes, this point. Su Zian was unable to refute, because in front of Prince Jin’s extraordinary and unsurpassed gifted genius, which person wasn’t a waste?

Only, what was the meaning of Prince Jin’s words? Could it be he still had a worthy daughter he could bring out?

Su Wan was already ruined, in this lifetime she could change her fortune, as for Su Luo...Su Luo? Don’t know why all of a sudden the scene of Su Wan tattletaling to him on that day appeared in Su Zian’s mind.

That day, Su Wan ran over to his study to look for him, repeatedly stating that Su Luo escaped and run away from home, that she went together with His Highness Prince Jin to Sunset Mountain Range together. Later, because of insufficient proof, it resulted in him leaving this matter unsettled, but now...

Suddenly, a thin line of perspiration appeared on Su Zian’s forehead, Could it be that the person His Highness Prince Jin was looking for had always been Su

Luo, and not Qing'er or Xi'er?

No way, no way, a giant mistake.

Based on Qing'er and Xi'er's, this kind of genius, also being called wastes by His Highness Prince Jin, Su Luo, that kind of genuine good-for-nothing, how could she enter His Highness Prince Jin's eyes? This was simply a fantasy story like the Arabian Nights, absolutely impossible, simply absurd!

However, His Highness Prince Jin was overbearing with an expression that said that if he didn't hand over the person, then he would massacre everyone in Su Manor. This attitude left Su Zian with no choice but to slant a meaningful glance towards Su Jingyu: "Didn't I tell you to go call over your younger sisters? Where's Luo'er? Where's Wan'er?"

No matter what, get those two girls to come over and let His Highness Prince Jin meet them. At that time, if he didn't like them, then wouldn't this matter be unrelated to Su Manor? Then, he would be able to send off this Asura from hell, right?

Today, Su Jingyu had suffered from a lot of very big shocks.

First, he was certain Su Qing could become Princess Jin, but who knew that this dream would be shattered. Then, he was certain Su Xi could become Princess Jin, the result was once again that his hopes and efforts came to nothing. Instead, Su Xi was mercilessly thrown out...

Now he was already stupefied, completely unable to understand the way that this enigmatic His Highness Prince Jin thought.

Hearing Su Zian's loud scolding voice, Su Jingyu momentarily returned to his senses and stammeringly said: "Third younger sister and fourth younger sister's place, that place, I was afraid there wasn't enough time, so I ordered some servants to go and inform them...how about, I, I go there at once?"

Just at this time, the fragmented sounds of footsteps could be heard from outside.

Everyone looked towards the doorway.

Under the escort of a servant girl, Su Wan who was in poor health was helped

inside.

In the split second when everyone saw her, they couldn't help but to stare with their eyes wide open. Then, they turned their eyes away.

In merely a very short time, Su Wan's entire person had completely changed.

Before, her body was slim and graceful like the morning dew. Although one could not say she was the at the peak, but she was also a rare beauty.

However now, her entire person was extremely obese, compared to her past look, it was like she had plumped up a full circle. While she was walking, the fat on her whole body was quivering.

Oh heavens, was this still that slender and graceful Su Wan? The her now was basically a fat pig!

It simply made people feel this scene was too pitiful to behold.

Su Zian furtively looked at that aloof and remote His Highness Prince Jin. His Highness Prince Jin was as before, calmly drinking his tea. That indifferent appearance seemed to say that the person he wanted to find was obviously not Su Wan.

## Chapter 320 – Returning to Su Manor (20)

---

Also, the Su Wan who looked like a fat pig now, how could she be the person His Highness Prince Jin was looking for? If His Highness Prince Jin really selected this kind of Su Wan, then it simply was...that his eyes were blind!

Su Zian disdainfully waved his hand: “Carry her away now without delay, looking at her is bad luck.”

“Daddy—” Immediately, tears rolled out of Su Wan’s eyes. She threw off the servant girl’s hand and she launched over to hug Su Zian’s thigh: “Daddy, save me, daddy—everyday, this daughter would only drink water, but don’t know why this daughter would become this fat. Quickly, you should think of a way to save this daughter, daddy—”

Su Wan really couldn’t understand, she simply did not eat many meals, yet how could this be the result, how could she change into the kind of appearance she had right now.

Now, with great difficulty, she could see her father to allow her see the sky again. How could she lose this opportunity? Otherwise, she really would be ruined for this lifetime!

Su Zian’s expression was uncertain, with a frown, he said: “His Highness Prince Jin is here, you give me to be quiet. People come, bring her away.”

Since she was not the person His Highness was looking for, he naturally would not be polite. What’s even more, Su Wan...recalling the things he saw in that large fire from back then, he wished he could directly choke this daughter that disgraced him to death and forget about it.

Su Wan, with great difficulty, was able to be released, why would she give up so easily? One could only see her firmly hugging onto Su Zian’s thigh. Hearing that His Highness Prince Jin was here, she turned around and complained

tearfully towards Prince Jin, saying: “Your Highness, I beseech you to persuade my respectable father, to invite an Apothecary back to treat me. I really can’t stand it anymore. I beg you.”

Nangong Liuyun finally put down his teacup with a smile that was not quite a smile as he raised an eyebrow: “This person is?”

Su Zian forced a smile and said: “Incurring Your Highness’s ridicule, this person is Su Wan. My third daughter, only a few days ago, a little matter occurred, therefore...People come, hurry and bring third Miss away!”

Under Su Zian’s command, immediately, a group of extremely fierce and ugly servants approached. Holding onto Su Wan’s hands and legs, they were just about to tow her away.

Su Manor’s third Miss...all of a sudden, a dark intent flashed through Nangong Liuyun’s mind. He unhurriedly lifted his hand: “Wait.”

Such a soft short sentence, made these monster-like servants pause. They released Su Wan, doubtfully looking towards His Highness Prince Jin.

After Su Wan broke away from the control of those people, she knew even her father was also unreliable. Consequently, she staggered along, throwing herself towards Nangong Liuyun, crawling and groveling on the ground. Choking with sobs, she said: “Your Highness save me, I beg Your Highness to save me——”

Now, all the important people seeing this was struck dumb. Could it be that His Highness Prince Jin really had interest in this fallen woman Su Wan that was as fat as a pig?

If this matter was true, then His Highness Prince Jin’s taste was rather too extreme, too heavy right?

Now everyone’s gaze was focused on Nangong Liuyun’s face, unblinkingly looking at him, deeply afraid of missing a trace of information.

Nangong Liuyun faintly looked at Su Wan, his pair of beautiful eyes concealed wickedness and charm: “Oh? Someone wants to harm you?”

“Yes! Someone put poison in my food, otherwise, I absolutely would not become this fat within a few days. Your Highness, I beg you to say a few good

words for me to my father. A few words from you is more powerful than the thousand words I would say.”

Su Wan’s tears were packed, crying like the rain on pear flowers. Only, it was now a pity you couldn’t make out a trace of beauty, matched to that extremely fat body, the more you looked, the more it would spoil a person’s appetite.

Contrary to what one might expect, His Highness Prince Jin was actually not scornful, unexpectedly, he actually smiled.

Nangong Liuyun’s jointed finger at once fastened onto the loop on the armrest of the chair. He faintly smiled and raised an eyebrow: “Maybe you made a mistake in some matters and received the proper punishment, right?”

## Chapter 321 – Returning to Su Manor (21)

---

“No, Not possible.....” Suddenly it seemed as if Su Wan had thought of something, and immediately, a thread of maliciousness flashed within her eyes, “It’s Su Luo, for sure, it is that little slut who poisoned me. Besides her, there’s no one else!”

When talking about hate, in this lifetime, the person Su Wan hated the most precisely was Su Luo.

In that moment, Nangong Liuyun’s eyes were narrowed like a sharp blade, immediately, the surrounding atmosphere seemed to have condensed into frost. A gust of cold air began to surge up from the soles of all of their feet.

“What’s going on?” At this moment, everybody in the reception hall was looking at each other in dismay. Why was it that all of a sudden, within the reception hall, the temperature seemed to have dropped a lot? It was a whiff of killing intent that was like a double-edged sword suspended over the top of their heads, making them feel as if they were all on tenterhooks.

Nangong Liuyun was still gracefully sitting there as before, with a tone that was as light as a feather carrying a trace of his amiable manner: “You said it is... Su Luo?”

His voice was gentle and languid, extremely pleasant to hear and had a nobleness that was hard to reach.

Only, it was just that people familiar with him knew, His Highness Prince Jin was about to start a carnage full of bloodletting.

“Yes! It is definitely her! At that time, she harmed me.....Harmed me by destroying my reputation. Now, she still poisoned me until I became fat like this, such a cruel heart and a very malicious woman!” Su Wan was so furious that it made her look sinister and nearly insane.

Nangong Liuyun suddenly smiled, that smiling expression was even more gorgeous and resplendent than the cherry blossoms in March.

He let out a faint sound in agreement and pondered with his chin in his hand. He unhurriedly and deliberately said: “Indeed, as fat as a pig, oh, not so, wouldn’t this appearance be an insult to pigs?”

Once these words were spoke, Su Wan was immediately startled. She stupidly gazed at His Highness Prince Jin and was somewhat uncertain whether this person, the rumored legendary omnipotent His Highness Prince Jin, was standing on her side or not.

The words he said were truly cutting, not sparing her feelings even the littlest bit.

Nangong Liuyun leisurely fished out a single brown-colored medicinal pill and shook it in front of Su Wan: “Anyway, isn’t it just the condition of getting fat, the medicinal pill to detoxify it, this king has it right here——”

What? Immediately, Su Wan’s pair of eyes gave off excited lights of extraordinary splendour. She had a very surprised and ecstatic expression as she stared at that piece of detoxifying medicinal pill. She looked like a dog entirely fixated on a bone with an unusually devout manner.

“This, This is the exact antidote?” Su Wan was so moved that her lips were trembling.

Nangong Liuyun’s tone was very soft and gentle, also carrying a touch of smile: “That’s right, this is the exact antidote. It’s just that after eating it, there is a very minor side effect.”

“What side effects?” Su Wan, having been mesmerized by the efficacy of this medicinal pill, totally did not notice the treacherous gleam that flashed through Nangong Liuyun’s pair of ink-black eyes .

“Only after using it will you know.” Nangong Liuyun drank a shallow mouthful of tea. His eyes had a smile that was not quite a smile expression, full of meaning that would make someone reel. His gaze was concealed, nefarious, and inscrutable.

“No matter what the side effects are, I beseech Your Highness Prince Jin to bestow this medicine! If it can truly remove this poison, in the future, Su Wan would do whatever and work extremely hard to repay Your Highness!” Su Wan’s face was resolute, both of her hands were firmly clenched into fists.

This was her last chance, moreover, if she was able to stay by His Highness’s side.....she would simply be flying to the top of the tree and transforming into a phoenix.

The matter that made people feel strange was that the corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth only hooked into an enigmatic, demonically charming smile. Without even haggling over the price, he tossed that medicinal pill to Su Wan.

Su Wan took it. She didn’t even use water and impatiently directly swallowed it in her excitement.

Su Zian’s group of people waited anxiously as they watched His Highness Prince Jin. No matter what, they couldn’t understand why His Highness Prince Jin, with indeterminable mood swings, would treat Su Wan so differently. Could it be that he truly fancied Su Wan?

But, it always felt that somewhere was strange.....

Su Zian kneeled down with deep gratitude said: “Your Highness’s favor in bestowing the medicine, your favor is so great, that this person will remember for as long as I live.....”

## Chapter 322 – Returning to Su Manor (22)

---

Nangong Liuyun carelessly waved his hand, stopping Su Zian's false words of courtesy. A weird and sly smiling expression appeared on his mouth: "General Su really will remember this as long as he lives. It's just that words of thanks for this king are not necessary."

"Huh?" Su Zian was even more confused, in the end, what was His Highness Prince Jin playing at?

But speaking of Su Wan, once she ate the medicinal pill, afterwards, the effect of the drug very quickly appeared.

The body that was originally as fat as a pig became like a punctured balloon, in front of their eyes, it very quickly slimmed down.

In less than a quarter of an hour, the fat across her whole face and all over her body, without exception, actually disappeared without a trace. Once again, she regained the beautiful, slender body from before. Unexpectedly, the skin on her face was even better than before, exquisite and glossy. Her skin was like amber.

Within the reception hall, everyone was watching this scene with a mystified expression. They were speechless from amazement.

His Highness Prince Jin had carried this medicinal pill on his body, and also just gave such a treasure of a medicinal pill to Su Wan...Then, Su Wan was the person His Highness was looking for? A complicated emotion flitted across Su Zian's heart.

If he knew that the person His Highness fancied was Su Wan, before, no matter what, he would not treat her like this. Only, now there should still be time to remedy it.

Having thought up to here, Su Zian squeezed out a trace of a smiling

expression on his rigid face. Smiling towards Su Wan, he said: “Why haven’t you quickly gone to thank His Highness? If His Highness hadn’t bestowed the medicine, the rest of your life would have been ruined.”

“Yes, Wan’er, from now on, you should properly follow His Highness. You are not allowed to be mischievous again.” The corner of Madam Su’s mouth squeezed out a stiff smile. Her smile was very unnatural.

Su Jingyu also gave a forced smile and stepped forward to curry favor: “Third younger sister, in the future when you are living a good life, don’t forget your older brother, oh.”

Su Wan arrogantly swept them a glance. These people, when she was down and out, they kept hitting her when she was down. They were even wishing that she could have died earlier. Now that they knew His Highness adored her, each and every one of them actually came over to fawn on her. Humph! They thought that she could still forgive them?

Su Wan haughtily raised her chin and with a few steps, she walked to Nangong Liuyun’s side. Then, she said in a cute and clever voice: “Father, daughter is already His Highness’s people. From now on, matters in Su Manor doesn’t have the least bit of relation to me.”

No matter what, Su Zian also did not expect for her to say this kind of stuff in front of everyone. Originally, he thought that although Su Wan would have some resentment in her heart, still, she had been brought up in Su Manor for more than ten years, after all. Overall, she should have some feelings, but he never thought she would repay with such ingratitude.

Su Zian’s expression, in a split second, had threads of anger: “Wan’er, what are you saying? Also, quickly come over here!”

“I won’t!” Su Wan said with the confidence of being right, and stood by Nangong Liuyun’s side. She arrogantly and bossily glared at these people that had once turned their backs on her. A malicious light appeared in her eyes.

What made people baffled was that regardless of what disturbance occurred in his surroundings, Nangong Liuyun only indifferently sipped his tea, completely lacking any interest in interfering.

Was he indulging Su Wan, or simply that he couldn't be bothered enough to care?

Because they couldn't grasp His Highness Prince Jin's attitude, therefore, Su Zian's heart had some misgivings, so he wouldn't dare to go up and forcefully pull Su Wan. His face blackened but he could only furiously yell: "Su Wan, don't forget that no matter what, your last name is still Su."

Su Wan saw that just now, when she said she was His Highness Prince Jin's person, this sentence, His Highness Prince Jin did not refute it. This gave her inexhaustible confidence and faith. One could see her sneer grimly repeatedly: "Last name is Su? You think I would really want such a nauseating family name that makes people sick?"

"Su Wan, you are extremely daring, don't tell me you are not afraid of being disciplined by the family ancestors?" Su Jingyu didn't expect that once Su Wan got power, she would immediately not recognize people, thus with a cold face and a furious tone, he yelled.

## Chapter 323 – Returning to Su Manor (23)

---

“Disciplined by the family ancestors? Ha ha ha, what laughable discipline by family ancestors! When I was suffering all kinds of torment, where was that ancestor? And where were all of you? Each and every one of you observed coldly like bystanders, throwing rocks at me who was down, wishing that I would drop dead! Since it is like this——”

Su Wan’s gaze swept over all of their faces, and finally, her eyes flashed with a touch of resolute radiance.

“Since it is like this, then, not having the last name of Su is fine! From now on, I, Su Wan, does not have any relationship with your Su family! Don’t ever come looking for me again!”

As soon as those words were out, Su Zian’s complexion immediately darkened.

Su Wan’s aggressiveness caused Su Zian to feel that he had lost face.

He, as a stately Great General that protected the nation, was a person high above, with ten thousand people underneath. He was actually forced to these circumstances by a concubine’s daughter? How could he have the prestige to stand facing his colleagues? How could he have the face to lead several tens of thousands of military forces? How could he have the prestige to be the master of the household?

Su Zian pointed at Su Wan and angrily roared: “Good, these words were what you said. People come, bring me the family genealogy record!”

Su Zian flung his sleeves while panting in rage, his complexion was ashen.

Very quickly, a servant came holding the family genealogy records.

Su Zian saw Su Wan with her chin lifted arrogantly, standing by His Highness Prince Jin’s side.

That unrepentant appearance of hers suddenly added more anger to his fury: “Su Wan, again, I will give you one last chance. You really want to separate yourself from the Su family?”

Now, Madam Su’s thoughts were very complicated. She also naturally wished to have Su Wan expelled very far away, so as to avoid seeing this annoyance.

But, her identity as the main mistress of Su Manor, when Su Zian was in a rage, in the capacity of the main mistress in charge of the family, she ought to come out and console everyone.

Madam Su gently pulled at Su Zian’s arm, with a soft voice, persuaded him by saying: “General, take a break, how great of a matter is expelling from the family? How could you make such a decision when in a rage? In the future, when you recall this, you certainly will regret it.”

Su Zian slowly released a breath, gloomily and coldly glared towards Su Wan.

How could he want to expel Su Wan from the family? Let alone under the circumstances when His Highness Prince Jin’s attitude was unclear? But Su Wan was really too offensive.

Su Wan coldly smiled: “Madam Su, you also should stop faking your kindness. Who doesn’t know that right now, you wish you could choke me to death. Ha ha ha, General Su, you should still strike off my name from the family genealogical records without delay. You still believe I really care for it!”

Su Wan kept on saying Madam Su and General Su, clearly acting as if they were not her father and mother.

“You— —” Suddenly, a mouthful of anger bubbled up in Su Zian, his pair of eyes was opened very wide, itching to choke Su Wan to death: “Good, very good! This was your own choice. In the future, if you were to die outside, Su Manor will absolutely not stick up for you!”

Su Zian, under a raging temper, with one grab, took the family genealogical records. On Su Wan’s page, he crossed it off with dense brush strokes again and again, eliminating her name thoroughly from the family genealogical records.

In the course of this process, Su Wan continued to lift her chin up in an icily arrogant manner. She cast sidelong glances at these people that had stepped on

her with the soles of their feet.

No, no, still missing one... Su Wan was very dissatisfied with this.

Now, once again, the sounds of footsteps could be heard from outside. The servants lifted up the curtain, and people could only see a young woman with delicate and pretty features walk in from outside of the door.

One only saw her body covered in a light green muslin dress that swept the floor like a circling butterfly. Her beautiful, jet-black hair was tied up with a light-colored ribbon. Her face was not covered with cosmetics, but was fresh, clean and quite moving. Her pair of eyes was like water, with a clear and natural, light gaze.

Her stride was steady with a natural and relaxed bearing as she slowly walked over. It gave people a kind of fresh, clean and quick-witted impression that illuminated her brilliantly.

This person was not an outsider, she was Su Luo. She saw everyone and her mouth burst open into a shallow, indifferent smile.

## Chapter 324 – Returning to Su Manor (24)

---

Now, her bearing was natural and relaxed, where was she still that cowering, good-for-nothing Su Luo? She had practically changed beyond recognition, as if she was reborn.

When Nangong Liuyun saw Su Luo, that pair of malicious eyes momentarily transformed. It was now intoxicating, full of tender sentiments and gleaming like rays reflecting off water. That smile could stir up and entice all living things.

Originally, Su Luo didn't want to come since she never liked to participate in this kind of spectacle. However, hearing what the servant who was sent to invite her said about the events that occurred in the reception hall, she had no choice but to come.

If she didn't come, who knew if Nangong Liuyun would directly draw up an engagement contract with her cheap father and send her away with the agreement, okay? This kind of thing, she could only control it well if she was personally at the scene.

Seeing Su Luo come over, the corner of Su Qing's mouth hooked up coldly.

When Su Wan saw Su Luo, the hatred in her eyes was very obvious. Without waiting for others to speak, she suddenly took a big stride and rushed towards Su Luo. She raised her slapping palm high: "Slut, you still dare to come! I'll kill you!"

However, confronted with a first rank Su Wan, Su Luo effortlessly and easily turned sideways and was able to avoid her.

Still remember that the last time when she fought Su Wan, she didn't even have one iota of spirit power. But the her now was already a third rank, really, after a lapse of three days, she made people sit up and take notice.

Su Wan didn't expect that she couldn't even hit Su Luo, making her so angry that she stomped her foot: "If you have the ability, then don't run! Today, I simply must kill you!"

Su Luo, with both hands holding her arms, sneered while casting her a sidelong glance: "Want to kill me? Just based on your skills?"

Su Wan wanted to kill her now, that was basically a task that was impossible for her to accomplish.

Unexpectedly, when Su Wan heard these words, she merely smiled coldly and said: "Su Luo, I already know you practiced martial arts. Now, I have revealed it through my test! You concealed it from everyone and secretly cultivated, in the end, what are you plotting?!"

Su Luo actually knew martial arts? Su Zian was immediately stupefied. Wasn't this girl a good-for-nothing? When she was at the Spirit Testing Temple, didn't she test with not even a bit of spirit strength? How could she possibly cultivate then?

But watching her avoid Su Wan's attack just a moment ago, she really did know martial arts. Moreover, her cultivation wasn't that low. In the end, what was going on? Su Zian was bewildered.

Not only Su Zian, Su Jingyu and others were also bewildered, except for Su Qing.

Because not long ago, she had just fought with Su Luo, so she could clearly see through her strength. Although Su Luo's cultivation among people of her age was pretty good, yet she still couldn't be compared to herself. Therefore, she was somewhat disdainful of Su Luo.

Su Luo causally swept a glance at Su Zian, seeing that he had a surprised expression, she nonchalantly said: "I was merely waiting for the right moment to give father a nice surprise, what possible plot could there be?"

Su Zian, hearing this, his overly sensitive heart that was harmed just a moment ago by Su Wan, was healed. He was over the moon with joy.

Yes, Su Wan, that selfish and loathsome girl was driven out of the family, then forget it. Now, Luo girl was no longer a good-for-nothing, so he once again

**gained another daughter.**

**As it turned out, before, he had never viewed Su Luo as his daughter.**

**Su Wan saw that driving a wedge between them didn't work, so she changed to another method, sneeringly said: "Even if I am not able to beat you, so what? Su Luo, look clearly, now I am His Highness Prince Jin's people. If I ask people to kill you, who would dare to object?"**

**She, Su Wan, now had a backer. Also, this backer was powerful and unsurpassed. If she didn't kill Su Luo today, she vowed not to let go! Su Wan secretly swore an oath in her heart.**

**"His Highness Prince Jin's people?" Su Luo had one hand holding her arm and the other hand holding her chin in a pondering posture. Her eyes were flowing with light and brilliant colors, faintly smiling at Nangong Liuyun while lifting an eyebrow, "Nangong Liuyun, is she really your people?"**

**Once these words came out, immediately everyone sucked in a breath of cold air!**

# Chapter 325 – Returning to Su Manor (25)

---

Su Luo had gone insane!

She actually dared to directly call His Highness Prince Jin by his given name; that was a taboo! Moreover, she also used that kind of arrogant tone that sounded quite disdainful. She actually dared to use this kind of attitude to speak to His Highness Prince Jin, simply did not want to live!

Just a moment ago, Su Zian had viewed Su Luo in a new favorable light, now, he was itching to beat this daughter who had just popped up to death. He had said it before, not well-mannered enough to bring out in public, just could not be brought out in public. She didn't even understand a little bit of etiquette!

Su Zian immediately kneeled on the ground in reverence and fear, and kowtowed to beg for forgiveness: "Your Highness, please calm your anger, Su Luo, she is ignorant, her mind is not very bright. Normally, she is always erratic and uncivil, she doesn't think before she speaks. Your Highness, you must by all means not lower yourself to her level!"

Su Zian was begging for forgiveness on one hand, while on the other hand, he wished he could directly strike Su Luo dead.

This pest of a spirit that harmed people, did she not know, that very possibly just because of this sentence, in an instant, the entire Su Manor would be a bloodbath.

Su Zian saw His Highness Prince Jin had no reaction since the beginning, couldn't help but to take a furtive look towards him.

But he only saw that remote and aloof His Highness Prince Jin, that was always calmly drinking tea with an uninterested expression that lacked any emotion. It was as if the matters taking place around him had nothing to do with him.

Seeing this, Su Zian's mind became even more anxious. He lifted his hand, grabbing towards Su Luo: "Loathsome girl, why haven't you already quickly kneeled down to beg for forgiveness from His Highness?"

Who knew that this grab of his would actually come up empty. Then when he lifted his eyes to look, he found that now, he had already lost sight of Su Luo's figure.

At this moment, Su Luo had already moved to Nangong Liuyun's side with her quick steps. This high and mighty person towering above very unhappily glared down at her.

Su Zian, upon seeing this, could only feel his mind darken. It was a scorching thunderous lightning that exploded, splitting open his brain. Oh heavens, this loathsome girl simply was leading Su Manor directly on the road to extinction. She actually still dared to stick her hands at her waist and glower at His Highness Prince Jin...

At this moment, it was not only Su Zian, there was also Su Jingyu and Madam Su kind of people. They were all looking at Su Luo with a dumbfounded expression. Rays of extreme fear flashed through their eyes.

Because this action of Su Luo's, in their eyes, appeared to be simply too brazen, too disgraceful, and too much like courting death.

Su Wan pushed Su Luo with a very displeased expression: "Why did you come over here? The one His Highness Prince Jin fancies is me and not you, get lost!"

Saying this, Su Wan very rudely lifted her palm to slap towards Su Luo's face.

Su Luo casually extended her hand, effortlessly and with great ease, she captured Su Wan's moving hand. She cast her a quick glance with smile that was not quite a smiling expression: "Someone just like you, Nangong Liuyun would actually fancy you? Su Wan, don't forget, the you right now is a fallen woman, oh. Your body was already sullied by another man, oh."

"You——" Su Wan was extremely angry, this matter was something she could not bear to recollect. Now, it was laid bare and revealed in front of everyone by Su Luo.

"Su Luo, it was you, right! That affair was you who did it, right?!" A crazy

malicious radiance shone from Su Wan's eyes.

“On that day, that killer was clearly going to your courtyard to rape you, this slut. However finally, in an unfathomable, mysterious way, he appeared on top of my bed. Furthermore, you know martial arts, you obviously knows martial arts, and not at a low level either....It was you, clearly it was you! Su Luo, you slut, you ruined me! I want to kill you!”

Even if Su Wan was not completely right, but her guess was pretty close. On that day, it really was Su Luo who had set up that maneuver. It was also Su Luo who had reversed their roles and drugged her.

At this moment, Su Wan's rage was difficult to manage, she was making threatening gestures to Su Luo and was about to claw at Su Luo's face. But now, her martial arts ability just couldn't be compared to Su Luo's. Therefore, Su Luo easily and effortlessly flung her away, as if throwing away a coarse sack.

## Chapter 326 – Returning to Su Manor (26)

---

Su Wan was flung to the ground. It hurt so much tears were about to come out of her eyes. However, her hatred had already blinded her eyes.

She knew that she right now was no match for Su Luo. Moreover, she right now had already broken away from Su Manor. Therefore, Su Zian and his people simply would not stick up for her again. What to do?

No, no, she still had Prince Jin, His Highness Prince Jin would help her!

She was already His Highness Prince Jin's people now, wasn't she? He would even bestow such a precious medicinal pill to her. Why wouldn't he help her again to kill such a little minor person like Su Luo?

As a result, Su Wan didn't have time to deal with the pain, crawling and moving towards His Highness Prince Jin, she complained tearfully: "Your Highness, I beseech you, help me kill Su Luo, that little slut. As long as you kill her, in the future, regardless of what you want me to do, I am completely willing. I beg you to help me avenge this hatred..."

Su Wan wept like a pear blossom in the rain, right now, she truly had some delicate fragile beauty that made the heart of people watching feel tenderness towards her.

However, it was a pity...she was wrong. She was wrong from the onset, moreover, she was outrageously wrong.

"Alas." Nangong Liuyun finally put down the teacup in his hand, his gaze landed on Su Wan's body light as a feather. His intoxicating pair of eyes carried a touch of a smiling expression, seemingly ridiculing and mocking. He leisurely repeated what she said: "Kill Su Luo on your behalf?"

Su Wan thought that His Highness Prince Jin had already agreed, immediately, her grief turned into happiness: "Many thanks to Your Highness,

many thanks for Your Highness's help to accomplish this!"

After she was finished thanking His Highness Prince Jin, Su Wan immediately turned her head around and sinisterly stared at Su Luo with a cold and malicious smile said: "Little slut, you will die for sure."

Indeed, people that His Highness Prince Jin was set on would always die very tragically, quite inhumanely...

Both of Su Luo's hands were holding her arms, and with a faint smile, she cast sidelong glances at Nangong Liuyun: "Oh, His Highness Prince Jin's charismatic beauty really is limitless. In the beginning, I heard people say you had deep feelings for second elder sister and that it was serious. Afterwards again, rumor spread that you were infatuated with fifth younger sister. Now, what's this? You won't even let Su Wan, a fallen woman, slip by?"

"Hiss——"

Everybody at the scene inhaled a cold breath of air.

Brave, too brave, simply full of bravery!

This absolutely was the number one bravest person since the beginning of history.

This absolutely was the first time since the beginning of history that someone dared to speak like this to His Highness Prince Jin.

Su Zian saw Nangong Liuyun slowly stand up, his heart was extremely plaintive and aggravated: Finished, finished, finished...Su Manor was about to be done for...

However, Nangong Liuyun's movements afterwards surprised him until his chin almost dropped to the ground.

He only saw that remote and aloof, godlike Nangong Liuyun smilingly rub Su Luo's head: "Oh, this king's Luo girl is jealous, really hard to come by."

His Highness Prince Jin's devilishly charming voice also carried a touch of tender sentiments. That tone clearly had hints of a spoiling, indulging and conniving expression.

In addition, there was also his ecstatic address of her as 'this king's Luo girl'.

**At this moment, in all directions around, it was quiet. It was so quiet that the people watching could hear the sound of each other's heartbeat.**

**This was because this situation was really too strange, so strange that everyone was incredulous. They were all staring outrageously at the couple in front of their eyes who were like a pair of jade annulus.**

**However, what made them even more stunned was what was still to come.**

**They only saw Su Luo directly step on his foot, her tone was ice cold as she said: "Who is your Luo girl? In your dreams. Humph, you are such a womanizer, attracting the bees and butterflies, one on the left and another on the right non-stop."**

**Su Luo, she stepped...stepped on His Highness Prince Jin's foot.**

**It was absolutely the truth, because on His Highness Prince Jin's black leather boots, there was clearly a distinct mark of a footprint.**

**His Highness Prince Jin that was just stepped on, this time ought to get angry, right? Everyone present all looked towards His Highness Prince Jin expectantly.**

**Su Luo deserved to die, too deserving of death! She actually went and stepped on His Highness Prince Jin's foot? Could it be that she didn't know, the thing that annoyed His Highness Prince Jin the most, greatest, and utterly, was when someone stepped on his foot, okay?**

## Chapter 327 – Returning to Su Manor (27)

---

However... Against everyone's expectations, His Highness Prince Jin didn't get angry at all.

His Highness Prince Jin not only didn't get angry, on the contrary, he even smiled dim-wittedly. His face was full of happiness and bliss...Yes, that's right, it was exactly a blissful, happy and silly smile. This smile appeared on the face of His Highness Prince Jin, that was like Yama, the King of Hell, ice-cold and unsympathetic.

Moreover, his voice clearly carried a thread of currying favor with her and a trace of childishness, acting like a spoiled little boy: "You have, this king's Luo girl has just felt jealous."

Just listen to the words he said, simply too childish!

People who heard this almost had goosebumps.

This basically was not that savage and callous His Highness Prince Jin that was from their impression. Clearly, he had completely changed into another person.

However, Su Luo still hadn't bought into his act and unrestrainedly, she directly sat on the chair he was just sitting on. She took the teacup, and before she could pour the tea, His Highness Prince Jin had earlier already grasped the teapot and proceeded to politely pour the tea for her. His voice was extremely gentle and tender: "The tea is somewhat cold, drink less of it, later, this king will personally boil tea for you to drink."

Su Luo snappily glared at him: "Again, you want to tempt and coax me to go over? Definitely not listening to your deception."

"Where would I dare to deceive you? How about this king carry you over in a palanquin with eight bearers?" Nangong Liuyun smiled roguishly while moving

closer to her.

“Dream on, you, move away from me!” Su Luo glared at him and she pushed him away from in front of her eyes.

The two of them acted as if no one else was present, going back and forth in a tit for tat. This was how they would normally interact with each other. However, in the eyes of the people nearby, this was too much of a shock. This was already something that words could not be used to describe.

Su Zian unwaveringly stared at the two people in front of his eyes who seemed to be chatting about trivial things. His brain went blank and was frozen, it seemed as if his thought process had forgotten how to keep turning.

Su Jingyu had his mouth opened wide, so surprised that he was simply godsmacked.

Madam Su’s pair of eyes flashed with malicious rays. The embroidered handkerchief in her hand was nearly torn to shreds.

The eyes Su Qing used to look at Su Luo had a deep and cold killing intent.

The one who found it hardest to accept was really Su Wan....

She already didn’t have Su Manor as a way out. The only person she could rely on for support was His Highness Prince Jin. But now, His Highness Prince Jin was exchanging flirtatious glances with Su Luo. However, just a moment ago, she had clearly asked His Highness Prince Jin to go kill Su Luo!

This...this simply was...

Now, the complicated mood in Su Wan’s heart simply could not be described by words.

She merely thought that she was about to go insane.

No, no way, His Highness Prince Jin was hers. She absolutely could not let Su Luo snatch him away, absolutely would not permit it!

Su Wan, staggering along, climbed up from the ground. From the hair on top of her head, she pulled out a sharp, thin hairpin and directly stabbed towards Su Luo’s throat: “Slut, I want to kill you——”

Su Wan was aggressive and her eyes had a malicious and crazy light. With her dishevelled hair, she looked somewhat malevolent and terrifying.

However, without waiting for her to get closer, when Su Luo still hadn't reacted, Nangong Liuyun directly flapped his sleeves and swept Su Wan far, far away.

“Bang——”

One could only hear a violent crashing sound. Su Wan's entire person was gravely flung into the wall. The strength was so great that almost the entire room was shaking.

Under normal circumstances, it's only correct that she ought to slide down along the smooth wall.

But, since it was His Highness Prince Jin that acted, it just wouldn't be that simple.

One could only see that His Highness Prince Jin's strength had actually directly made Su Wan smash into the wall, forming a person-shaped deep indentation. Su Wan simply could not even fall down, her entire person, in that manner, hung on the wall.

“Cough, cough, cough——” Su Wan repeatedly coughed. One mouthful of blood after another burst out, seemingly as if it doesn't cost money coming from her mouth. After directly vomiting out more than ten mouthfuls of blood, she was barely able to stop it.

## Chapter 328 – Returning to Su Manor (28)

---

Now, Su Wan's complexion was as white as paper, it seemed like she had only a flimsy thread of breath left and she looked exceedingly weak. It seemed possible that with the very next breath, she would die.

Nobody dared to step forward to lift Su Wan down from the wall. First, because it was His Highness Prince Jin who had acted, and second, it was because Su Wan had already broken away from the Su family. So as far as they were concerned, she was only an outsider now.

"For, for what reason?" Su Wan weakly opened her mouth to ask. While she was speaking, another mouthful of blood violently sprayed out.

A loud 'thump' sound rang out when her body tumbled to the floor. She almost passed out due to the severity of the pain from the fall.

Nangong Liuyun's gaze was lazy and devilishly charming. He cast an indifferent sidelong glance at her.

"For what reason... Your Highness is treating me like this... just a moment ago... didn't you say... I am Your Highness's woman... uhm?" Su Wan's pair of eyes stared fixedly at Nangong Liuyun. Her breath was feeble as she stared at him.

Just now everything was going well, but ever since Su Luo appeared, everything changed afterwards!

Nangong Liuyun started to laugh softly, his pair of peerless black eyes was completely apathetic: "When did this king acknowledge you as this king's people?"

Wha-what? Did His Highness Prince Jin actually never acknowledge this point?

It was not just Su Wan, almost everyone present was stunned as they stared at Nangong Liuyun who was pulling Su Luo to stand by his side. A sarcastic arc arose on his peerless, handsome face.

That's right, thinking back, a moment ago, it was only Su Wan who was saying those words by herself. In fact, from start to finish, His Highness Prince Jin never did acknowledge her, but Your Highness also never denied her claims either... For what reason would he do this?

Recalling His Highness Prince Jin's conduct and deeds toward Su Wan just now, everyone felt was somewhat weird.

Finally, it was still Nangong Liuyun who help clear up their confusion. And in passing, letting Su Wan become an enlightened ghost.

Nangong Liuyun, whose position was high above, looked down with a penetrating gaze that radiated an ice-cold light. He smiled with not quite a smile while lifting an eyebrow: "Before, the water that you drank was especially sweet, am I right?"

Su Wan was bewildered as she looked at Nangong Liuyun with uncertainty. How could His Highness Prince Jin even know of this? Could he have cared about her this much?

Nangong Liuyun smiled sinisterly and charmingly while continuing his explanation: "When you sleep, it's especially deep and you always have nightmares, am I right?"

Su Wan had a startled expression as she stared at Nangong Liuyun.

"Obesity poison." Said Nangong Liuyun with clear, bright and mesmerizing obsidian eyes. His black pupils that concealed a hawk-like gaze were sharp and cutting. He continued with the confidence of his convictions, as if everything was his by right, "That was the elixir that this king had dispatched people to secretly poison you with."

What?!

The person who poisoned Su Wan was actually His Highness Prince Jin? Why would he do this? What hatred did he have for Su Wan?

**Wasn't directly killing her the same? Why would he torment her like this?**

**Everybody was terrified and awed by this admission.**

**Su Wan was immediately stunned stupid, she would never have expected that it was actually His Highness Prince Jin who poisoned her. Furthermore, he also revealed this news in a tone that was as if it was right and expected.**

**"For, for what reason?" Before this, she basically had never really seen His Highness Prince Jin, let alone having offended him.**

**Even if she had offended him, he could just have her killed directly in response. Why would he waste so much effort to arrange this?**

**"For what reason?" Nangong Liuyun smiled faintly: "Such a forgetful Miss. Could it be that you forgot the matter from before of going to the Mercenary Union to issue a task?"**

**The matter of issuing a task?**

**Su Zian's eyelids jumped, at that time, hadn't they suspected Su Luo for issuing that task? Why was it that now, in a blink of an eye, it had changed into being Su Wan? In the end, how was this matter related?**

**His pair of malicious eyes was tightly fixed on Su Wan, trying to find any clue on her face.**

**Now, Su Wan's eyes shrank back, cowering in fear. She didn't expect that this matter would actually be known by His Highness Prince Jin.**

## Chapter 329 – Returning to Su Manor (29)

---

“But, but what I issued was to have a man rape Su Luo. Yet towards you...” Su Wan’s gaze slid down and saw that his large palm was holding firmly onto Su Luo’s hand, suddenly, she was shocked.

Could it be, could it be that His Highness Prince Jin was taking revenge for Su Luo? Oh Heavens, but this was impossible!

How could the stately and majestic Prince Jin take revenge for that Su Luo who was a good-for-nothing? This kind of trivial matter shouldn’t even enter his judicious eyes!

“Alas, such a pitiful child.” Nangong Liuyun sighed, a rolled up paper flew out from his sleeves and smashed on top of Su Wan’s head. He understatedly said: “Take it, examine it well, this is the method you are about to die from.”

This sentence of death from His Highness Prince Jin’s mouth was as simple as eating food or drinking water.

Even the Venerable Beichen Ying had received his proper punishment, how could a lowly person like Su Wan escape?

People that were involved in this matter, except for Beichen Ying, were all without exception ruthlessly dealt with by Nangong Liuyun.

Su Wan was trembling and simply did not dare to open that task form sheet.

It was something she had personally signed, how could she not know what was written inside?

At that time, they wrote three copies of this agreement. One copy was filed away in the Mercenary Union, another in the hands of the killer, and the final copy was in her own hands.

She had already destroyed the copy in her hands long ago. This copy now...

should have been seized from the Mercenary Union.

The Venerable Beichen Ying from the Mercenary Union was His Highness Prince Jin's people...If she had known earlier, known earlier that Su Luo and His Highness Prince Jin had something to do with each other, she would never have gone to the Mercenary Union.

No matter how you said it, it was thousands and tens of thousands she should not have. She should never have set herself against Su Luo.

A clear line of remorseful tears rolled down Su Wan's face, with a trembling voice, she said: "Your Highness Prince Jin is very calculating, laying down such a great scheme. First, you made me utterly isolate myself by having my name struck off from the family genealogy records. Subsequently, you proceeded to tell the truth about this matter; making me suffer so much pain and grief, that I would be better off dead....Very brilliant strategy."

Since that Obesity poison was put in place by His Highness Prince Jin, then that medicinal pill...

"This medicinal pill will make your body send out a rare perfume, even after your death, hum, so your corpse will still be very alluring. Well of course, only as far as magical beasts are concerned."

Nangong Liuyun held his chin in a contemplative posture, saying the truth in a manner that was full of good intentions.

That's right, after death, her corpse must be torn apart by magical beasts. Gnawed upon until even the skeleton would be gone... This was indeed what she wrote for this task. Su Wan recalled up to here, she then immediately fainted from fear and despair.

"Drag her away, carry it out according to the original plan." Nangong Liuyun carelessly waved his hand.

Immediately, a bodyguard came forward from among the guards at his back. Like a fierce tiger, he rushed towards Su Wan. He carried her over his shoulder and in a flash, he had already left Su Manor, darting towards the vast, great mountains.

Su Manor, the reception hall.

When all the people present saw Su Wan being carried away, without exception, they felt chills down their spines.

His Highness Prince Jin had deep thoughts and planned ahead. He handled matters as he pleased without the slightest scruple, moreover, his methods were cruel and bloody. People simply could not bear to see it.

He clearly could have just straight out killed Su Wan, but he would not. He insisted on planning it step by step, making Su Wan experience again and again the despair of going from heaven to hell. Only after he finished playing did he let her know it was an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. Making sure that even after death, she would not be able to have an intact corpse.

Su Zian only felt that he couldn't keep his lips from trembling. This kind of Prince Jin was simply too terrifying.

However, his gaze stopped and fixed on the hand His Highness Prince Jin used to hold Su Luo.

This time... this time ought to be the real one, right?

Truth be told, Su Zian was already scared silly.

From Su Qing to Su Xi, from Su Xi to Su Wan, and once more from Su Wan to Su Luo... His, Su Zian's, four daughters appeared one, followed closely by another, only to be rejected one after another.

## Chapter 330 – Playboy (1)

---

Su Luo really never thought that Nangong Liuyun would go to this extent just for her.

Since the beginning, he had set up this scheme to trap Su Wan, advancing step by step and trapping her more with every step. First, he had let her reach heaven, and then he threw her down from such great height. Following that, he once again lifted her up to the heavens to once more throw her down from that great height. She was half-dead from falling the second time, and only then did he tell her the truth. Afterwards, he made her face the way she was about to die while she was still alive.

She was a nobody, yet among the population, he would actually go to this extent just for her.

People were not vegetables, if one were to say that Su Luo's heart wasn't a little bit moved, that would be impossible.

Nangong Liuyun glanced back and saw that Su Luo looked dazed as she gazed at him, her pair of eyes carried an affectionate regard. A touch of joy flashed across his face, and with a spoiling and indulgent manner, he hooked the tip of her nose with his finger: "This king's little princess is really moved this time right? You should be reassured that after our marriage, this king will treat you even better. Do you believe me when I say that I will spoil you to the sky?"

"I don't believe it." Su Luo snappily glared at him, how could this person be so thick-skinned?

"Then you should marry this king and try it." Nangong Liuyun used a wheedling, childish tone while tugging at Su Luo's little hand. His face was covered in a pitiful expression.

"Not going to marry you" Su Luo shook off his hand.

Nangong Liuyun's face had a wounded expression and he looked at Su Luo with some recrimination: "Such a heartless girl, we have already shared the same bed, how can you be like this and not take responsibility!"

Once these words were out, the people in Su Manor who had originally been gaping blankly at their interaction were all once again dumbfounded.

The three veins on Su Luo's forehead bulged and pulsated. She quickly turned her head around and glared at Nangong Liuyun. She bit down hard on her teeth and stressing every syllable to say: "I demand that you shut up!"

She just knew it! She just knew that he would not let last night's matter be so easily swept under the rug!

However, she never would have thought that this shameless guy would actually do this under thousands of pairs of eyes and in front of everyone's face. Saying this kind of words!

What was called sharing the same bed? They had merely been covered in blankets and were simply chatting, okay?

What was called taking responsibility? Had she really done anything to him?

The little her in Su Luo's heart was about to be driven mad.

Nangong Liuyun would never be satisfied with small gains. His moist, glossy, liquid-like red lips were alluringly hot. His bright, limpid, peach blossom-like eyes looked at Su Luo with reproach. The accusation in his eyes was so obvious, it made people feel like Su Luo was a bad woman that had arbitrarily used him, then had indiscriminately discarded him.

Su Zian was nearly shocked with disbelief, He looked at the scene in front of his eyes with a shocked and stupefied expression. No matter how he looked at it, he couldn't believe it.

No way, no way, no way. How could this man that was feigning pitifulness to get some sympathy be His Highness Prince Jin, that evildoer? Absolutely not him! It was absolutely impossible!

Su Zian got his act together then let out a slight coughing sound: "Your Highness Prince Jin..."

Without completing the sentence, he had interrupted the Nangong Liuyun who was in the midst of brewing an affectionate mood. His eyes coldly swept towards Su Zian, it was like blocks of ice which had successfully condensed for millennium. Immediately, the last part of the sentence that Su Zian had wanted to say froze in his throat. He was unable to say another word.

How extremely complicated was Su Zian's mood in his mind right now, only he would know.

All these years, he had always regarded Su Luo as a good-for-nothing. He never once cared about her one bit. However, in the end, he would never have expected that His Highness Prince Jin, whom he had tried very hard to curry favor with, would actually treat Su Luo favorably.

No, not merely treating her favorably, His Highness Prince Jin was spoiling and indulgent towards Su Luo, to the point of having no bounds. He was almost at the point of seeing, hearing and obeying her to whatever extent she desired.

Only, was this real? Or was this merely another scheme of His Highness Prince Jin, wanting to deceive other people and putting on this false facade?

Su Zian had no choice but to have this kind of suspicion because of self-doubt. Because just a moment ago, that series of events was sufficient to prove how enigmatic His Highness Prince Jin was, with entirely unpredictable mood swings.

## Chapter 331 – Playboy (2)

---

Since the start, Su Qing had stood quietly aside, watching the melodrama unfold with ups and downs, then the complicated twists and turns of this great play from start to finish. In this play, she was the very first one to be kicked out becoming an eliminated cannon fodder. She was discarded so cleanly that there wasn't even a speck left as a remainder.

Before, no matter if it was at home or at her teacher's place, she was always the star that everyone revolved around. There never was anyone who could steal the spotlight that belonged only to her. Even by the person considered to be courted by His Highness Prince Jin it would also be out of the question!

She could not allow herself to be insulted like this. All the pride she had in her body since birth would absolutely not allow her to bow down her head.

Looking at Su Luo, a killing intent flashed through Su Qing's beautiful eyes that were clear, tranquil and cold.

"Su Luo! I challenge you!" Within the quiet hall, Su Qing's ice-cold voice drifted out, carrying an icily arrogance that would absolutely not tolerate rejection.

The first person to react was Su Zian. Just a moment ago, he was still immersed in a beautiful dream that he wove himself. Now all of a sudden, he heard these words from Su Qing, and immediately, his eyes jumped and he loudly chided: "Qing'er, what nonsense are you talking about? Quickly shut up!"

Because of His Highness Prince Jin's concern and care for Su Luo, now, her position had shot up immediately, who dared to move against her the slightest? Did you not want to live anymore? Su Zian was angered beyond reason by Su Qing.

Su Qing paid no mind to her father berating her. Her ice-cold gaze merely remained fixed on Su Luo, like a poisonous snake biting down tightly and not

letting go: “Life and death duel! Su Luo, do you dare to accept this challenge?”

She had simply gone insane!

Su Zian was furious to the point of nearly being hopping mad. He rigidly glared at Su Qing, with one hand slapping towards her: “Life and death duel? The two of you are flesh and blood sisters! Why speak of a life and death duel? You want to die, I will help you accomplish this right now!”

Not even mentioning that Su Luo was now being shielded by His Highness Prince Jin, just this information alone, if it were to spread out, would immediately turn them into a laughingstock in the entire capital.

To what degree had this hatred reached so they had to use a life and death duel among sisters to end this hatred?

This was the reason why Su Zian, without further ado, rejected the demand.

Even though the corner of Su Qing’s mouth was bleeding from Su Zian’s slap, her gaze was still as cold and dark as a poisonous snake, unwaveringly fixed on Su Luo. Stressing every syllable, she said: “Su Luo, do you dare? If you refuse, then you simply are not fit to receive His Highness Prince Jin’s affection! You are a coward! You, are, unworthy!”

Today, she was repeatedly refused, ridiculed and humiliated. This was the greatest shame for Su Qing since birth. Now, she must use blood to purge this shame. Otherwise, this would become the greatest devil in her heart for the rest of her life. In the future, when she would get caught by the devil in her heart, she would not be able to make any progress in her cultivation.

Nangong Liuyun’s sword-like eyebrows knotted slightly, his ice-cold phoenix eyes swept towards Su Qing. He opened his mouth and said frostily: “If you want to die, do not be anxious, this king will help you accomplish this.”

Su Zian’s heart jumped up violently for some time.

If His Highness Prince Jin wanted to kill someone, that would be simply like being marked for death by Yama the King of Hell, no one would be able to escape this!

Su Zian once again pulled back his hand to slap at Su Qing’s face, his furious

voice bellowed: “Quickly shut up! People, come, drag Su Qing away and lock her up!”

Su Qing’s mouth hooked into a sinister, fierce sneer, her gaze unblinkingly stared at Su Luo: “You coward! Su Luo, basically, you are just a good-for-nothing! Waste! Idiot! Coward! You are afraid of me. You simply could not defeat me! Ha ha ha ha——”

Su Luo knew that Su Qing was using insults to push her into a rash action. If she was clever enough, she could totally hide behind Nangong Liuyun’s body and let him handle Su Qing.

Right now, she could rely on Nangong Liuyun, leaving aside whether she could afford to repay him for this favor or not. But if she did that now, in the future could it be that whenever she come across someone stronger than herself, she would need to rely on Nangong Liuyun? For all of eternity?

However, the assassin side from her previous life told her: when relying on a mountain, the mountain would collapse. Depending on a person, that person would run away. Nobody could be more reliable when compared to herself.

## Chapter 332 – Playboy (3)

---

In this world where the strong rules, she must constantly become stronger and continuously exceed her own limits. Only this way would she be able to stand among the forest of the strong. and then stand at the summit of the strong.

Su Luo had both arms crossed in front of her chest. Her gaze was frigid and she lightly swept Su Qing a glance: “Life and death duel? Su Qing, did you not get it wrong?”

Life and death duel, once you stood in the ring, if one side did not die, then no winner could be determined. Even if one side admitted defeat, it was still no good. This was a battle where if one person did not die, it would never end.

Therefore, it was only for deep enmity and great hatred, otherwise basically no one would lay down a life or death condition before entering the ring of a life and death duel.

And yet, the first thing out of Su Qing’s mouth was a life and death duel, not leaving even a little bit of leeway for the opponent. It could be clearly seen how deep the resentment and grudge in her heart was.

Su Qing’s voice was as cold as ice, chilling through the bone: “You didn’t mishear what I said. I really want to set down a written challenge for battle. A written challenge for a life and death duel. Do you dare to accept it?”

“Scoff—” Nangong Liuyun uttered a derisive sound, “A fourth rank martial artist issued a written challenge for a life and death duel to a third rank, and even in such a courageous and righteous manner. Indeed very interesting. Speaking of which, you felt no shame in suggesting this out loud. However, even this king felt ashamed just listening.”

Nangong Liuyun’s remark, these words, immediately made Su Qing’s face turn very red. She resentfully and ashamedly turned her face away.

Finally, she let out a cold snort and merely glared at Su Luo: “Do you dare to accept? Don’t dare to accept, then don’t accept!”

Su Luo faintly smiled: “What’s so hard about accepting it? But I have a condition.”

“What condition?” Su Qing never expected that Su Luo really would dare to accept. A touch of astonishment flashed through her eyes, followed closely behind by her urgently asking, afraid they would be interrupted by others.

“This battle must be set to three months later.” Three months, with the assistance of medicinal pills and crystal stones, her cultivation would absolutely go up another level. The present her still have too large of gap from Su Qing.

She wanted to give herself a chance, she thought to test to what degree her cultivation could progress under the force of these kind of circumstances.

“Three months?” Su Qing sneered repeatedly: “Good, then just after three months! Su Luo, I’m really looking forward to your performance!”

Three months? Could it be she still believed that in a period of three months, she would be promoted from the third rank to the fourth rank? Really ridiculous!

Even if she really finally got promoted to the fourth rank, then again, so what? At that time, she would have already reached the middle or maybe the peak of the fourth rank. In the same manner, she would still effortlessly and easily eliminate her!

As for His Highness Prince Jin, that hurdle... Humph, His Highness Prince Jin was again not a forever dedicated kind of person. A three month period was enough for him get tired of playing with her. At that time, maybe he would still praise her that she did good.

Nangong Liuyun’s sword-like eyebrows knotted coldly. He took a quick, annoyed glance at Su Luo. However, Su Luo shook her head at him.

The arrow was already on drawn on the bow, so she had no choice but to shoot it. Su Qing had put forth the life and death duel in front of so many people. If she didn’t accept it, from now on, her days would be an unbroken succession of public attempts to kill and assassinate her. Since they were all battles, then why shouldn’t she just set a time? Within this period of time, she should strive

very hard to cultivate, right?

Nangong Liuyun coldly snorted in his heart, but very quickly, he smoothed out his eyebrows.

Humph, humph, if at that time Luo girl didn't have the odds to beat Su Qing, then he would personally undertake the task and directly kill Su Qing just like that. Why would there be so much wasted words? Having thought up to here, Nangong Liuyun felt relieved soon after.

Su Qing and Su Luo's life and death duel actually made Su Zian extremely anxious.

On one side was Su Qing whom he normally doted on and held in high regards from before. On the other side was Su Luo who rose abruptly because Nangong Liuyun fancied her. This made things exceedingly difficult for him.

Returning to her courtyard, Su Luo contemplated if she should have Lu Luo test at the Spirit Testing Temple.

After all, Lu Luo was always very loyal. In the future, Su Luo's cultivation would continue to rise. If Lu Luo was to make no headway in her cultivation, then in time, she would not be able to keep up with her footsteps.

## Chapter 332 – Playboy (3)

In this world where the strong rules she must be able to stand on her own feet to enter the ranks of the strong. Just as Su Luo was contemplating, how to respond to Su Qing when BOOM! An explosion rang out in the air.

Before she could even react, Nangong Liuyun had already appeared in front of her. In a split second, he wrapped her in his protective arms, so that Su Luo's face was resting against his broad and solid chest.

Su Luo's face immediately turned bright red. "Nangong Liuyun! You... you... Release me immediately!"

However, after a few moments, he still hadn't responded. She looked on further, and to her surprise, Nangong Liuyun's devilishly charming face was currently very serious. His eyes a cold, dark void, he was glancing backward at the source of the explosion.

"What are you looking at? What happened?" Su Luo made a quizzical face and turned to look because Nangong Liuyun was acting very strange.

Her eyes widened in astonishment.

Behind Nangong Liuyun was a scene of devastation.

The place where her family had stand... were all gone! All that was left were piles of ash. Su Jian... Su Qing... Su Wan... All completely turned to ash!

But with was stunned Su Luo was not the devastation but in the middle this, stood a handsome, long-haired, and otherworldly gorgeous man. Every feature and lines on his body was to curved to perfection, and his impossibly stunning face almost seemed to glisten in the wind.

Su Luo let out a gasp. She recognized this person! Wasn't this the daddy divine dragon, father of Meng Meng? Why had he come?

Nangong Liuyun looked down and saw the recognition on Su Luo's face. His face tightening into a scary expression, he immediately wrapped her tighter in his embrace, and forcibly turned her gaze away from the gorgeous stranger.

"Who is that? Do you know him?" He interrogated. His eyes were like deep abysses, entrances to the depths of hell.

Su Luo couldn't help but shudder from the sudden change in Nangong Liuyun's mood. Why the sudden change in mood?

"I... I... No, I..." Su Luo, faced with this overbearing Nangong Liuyun, and worried about why daddy dragon would show up now was unable to speak clearly, and she averted her gaze.

However, mistaken this for admission of guilt this only made Nangong Liuyun angrier. "Who is he? Tell me right now."

As she looked back at him, Su Luo suddenly felt that this situation was very unfair. Why did she have to tell Nangong Liuyun everything? What was he to her? Why did she have to do everything he said?

With new-found anger, she looked back at him and spat out angrily: "Why do you want to know? That's my business."

However, she immediately gulped down her words. Nangong Liuyun's stare had turned even more dark and demonic, and a violent and asura-like aura had formed, surrounding him and pressing down on Su Luo.

"Who she is to me is not your concern." At that moment, an ancient, apathetic voice rang out in the air. Behind Nangong Liuyun, the divine dragon had spoke out, glancing uninterestedly at Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun turned and stared at him coldly. He was silent for a few moments, before he said in a deep, ice-cold tone: "I don't know who you are, but Su Luo is my woman. You had better not go near her." He could tell that the handsome person across from him was very strong, possibly even stronger than him!

A mirthful expression appeared on the divine dragon's face. "Oh... Really? She's your woman?"

Nangong Liuyun's usually carefree attitude had taken a turn, as he stared with a savage light at the man in front of him. "She's. My. Woman." He grasped Su Luo tightly, so that she couldn't even move an inch.

Trapped in Nangong Liuyun's arms, Su Luo stared blankly at the two conversing men. She had never seen Nangong Liuyun so heated before. Could it be that the two meant just didn't get along?

“You’re very confident. How do you know that she isn’t my woman?” The divine dragon asked with a slight mocking smile. In one sweeping movement, he whipped his hand around. Su Luo was ripped out of Nangong Liuyun’s arms, and landed directly in the divine dragon’s embrace.

“Wha...” Rested against the divine dragon’s impeccable body, Su Luo let out a slight incredulous gasp. What was the divine dragon doing?! Didn’t he come for Meng Meng? Why was he purposely causing trouble?

“GIVE HER BACK!” Nangong Liuyun was furious.

---

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

## Chapter 333 – Playboy (4)

---

The result from the Spirit Testing Temple made Su Luo very satisfied. Because even though Lu Luo's talent wasn't very good, it was also not too bad. She was actually a green level talent.

Nangong Liuyun was afraid Su Luo would have an accident and assigned Ling Feng to come over and guard her.

Su Luo conveniently handed Lu Luo over to Ling Feng and shut herself in her room. She started to single-mindedly practice and cultivate.

She remembered that blackish bronze plaque she won from Liu family's old man, at that time she had immediately tossed it into her space. Coming back was another huge pile of different things that kept her busy until now, when everyone finally dispersed. As a result, she hadn't had an opportunity to carefully study it until now.

Su Luo retrieved that blackish bronze plaque from within her space, placing it in her hand, she turned it around to examine it.

The outer appearance of this bronze plaque, besides the few illegible and flamboyant handwritten words, she completely could not tell what was inside it that was so special.

Su Luo recalled that piece of jade the Venerable divine dragon gave her, at that time, she had poured spirit power into it and afterwards, she was able to see the cultivation methods sealed inside.

Could it be that this piece of bronze plaque also used the same method?

Sure enough, when Su Luo closed her eyes and poured her spirit power into the blackish bronze plaque, a group of densely-packed written words immediately emerged in her mind. With a careful look, it actually was the

cultivation method for Spirit Dance Steps.

As expected, the first condition to cultivate this was exactly what Nangong Liuyun mentioned previously. Innate spirit power must reach the purple level, otherwise the vigor of the mind basically was not strong enough to master the Spirit Dance Steps.

Within the notes, Su Luo actually saw such a sentence: if a space master was to cultivate this, there was a multiplier effect. Finally, they might also cultivate the Spirit Dance Steps to the realm of teleportation.

The realm of teleportation? Su Luo was immediately stunned.

If she was able to cultivate to the realm of teleportation, then that speed could be said to have reach the pinnacle. When the time came, who could possibly catch her?

Thinking up until now, the corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked into a nefarious smile.

Spirit power at the purple level, she had. The nearly extinct space mage on this continent, she was.

This Spirit Dance Steps was practically created just for her. There wasn't another cultivation method that was more suited for her to practice. The most coincidental matter was that the Liu family's Elder Ancestor had actually voluntarily come to her door and personally delivered it into her hands.

Recalling how Elder Liu looked after Nangong Liuyun successfully oppressed him, the smiling expression on Su Luo's face became even more obvious.

But very quickly, she collected herself and regained her resolute expression.

Three months time, could she really cultivate to the fourth rank and fight to see who was stronger?

According to the information she obtained; first thing in the morning, Su Qing had already gone back to her teacher's sect. In this three month period, don't know to what state Su Qing's cultivation would be promoted to.

Su Luo very quickly tossed Su Qing to the back of her mind, and started her own cultivation practice.

The first layer of the Spirit Dance Steps: speeding up.

She must expand the range of the handprint of the great Dimensional Imprint, increasing its power by tenfold.

The small fireball technique must be cultivated to the large fireball technique.

As for the wood system, Su Luo felt that this was of little value and was weak. Granted, even if she was to cultivate it to a high level, the wood system relied on plants in battle, and its fighting strength would not be too great. Therefore, she didn't plan to cultivate it as an auxiliary force for the fight.

After all, right now, her main fighting force and technique was the great Dimensional Imprint. Her auxiliary fighting force was her fire element system. She also had speed from Spirit Dance Steps, as long as she combined it well, then its formidable power would be very astonishing. To torture and kill a fourth rank martial artist was also not impossible.

Su Luo sat in the lotus position on her bed, then she took out some spirit liquid medicine that she had successfully refined from orange-colored crystal stones. She poured a few drops into her mouth, placed both hands on her knees and tightly closing her eyes. She allowed her body to slowly absorb the pure essence from that potent medicine.

And under the permeation of the orange-colored spirit liquid into her body, Su Luo's Dantian started to expand and strengthen bit by bit.

In the following month, Su Luo became a recluse.

She rarely walked out of her room, all the time she had was /employed on her cultivation practice.

## Chapter 334 – Playboy (5)

---

With her forgetting to eat and sleep in her dedication to cultivating, then adding in the unending stream of crystal stone spirit liquid's assistance; even though she hadn't advanced to the fourth rank, the result she obtained was still very astonishing.

First of all, the small fireball technique was the very first to break through to the large fireball technique. Its attack power compared to before had been upgraded by as much as fivefold.

The great Dimensional Imprint, while it still hadn't reached the boundary of the second layer, the handprint was however a lot larger than before. Its might had also risen quite a bit compared to before.

Yet, the boundary of the second layer, no matter how much Su Luo cultivated and tried to sense it, she was unable to set in motion the spirit force in her body. She thought that the reason might be because her strength was too low.

If she was to run into Liu Chengfeng again right now, she would absolutely be able to dominate in defeating him. And no longer would it be like last time when she had to use medicinal pills to still fight very exhaustingly for her life.

As for the Spirit Dance Steps, Su Luo, after tumbling down countless times, finally touched the doorway.

Within this period of time, most of her time was spent on practicing the Spirit Dance Steps. The more she practiced it, the more she felt the footwork was exquisite, peerlessly appearing as graceful as an immortal.

Merely just considering the speed alone, nobody within the third rank could match it.

Originally, she had just entered the beginning of the third rank, but after one

month of trying hard to the point of going without sleep or meals, she had already reached the middle of the third rank. This kind of cultivation speed, if others were to find out, would absolutely make people insane from jealousy.

Within this month, when Su Luo got tired of cultivating, she would just run over to refine medicinal pills. After refining medicinal pills, she would once again run back to cultivate her spirit strength. She would repeat this cycle non-stop in this way. Not only had she refined many medicinal pills simultaneously, her ability in refining pills had also advanced by leaps and bounds. What was even more significant was that her wood and fire dual elemental systems also followed after in growing by leaps and bounds.

In summary, through this month's bitter practice, her harvest was very huge.

In her space, Su Luo sat cross-legged by the side of the spirit spring with her eyes tightly closed. A fine layer of sweat seeped out of her face.

Su Luo, in the course of her cultivation, even she herself didn't notice a circle of spirit power rushing around her entire body. Finally, following her breathing, it quietly entered into her body. It was constantly nourishing her internal organs.

After a month of cultivating during which eating and sleeping were forgotten, Su Luo had now already reached a bottleneck. The originally soaring growth of spirit strength had also become slower. In addition, those dozens of crystal stones that she had refined into spirit liquid had also been almost completely consumed by her.

Time to go out.

Su Luo opened the tightly secured door, outside was the harsh and dazzling sunlight.

"Miss, you came out!" Seeing Su Luo walk out, the most excited person was none other than Lu Luo.

Su Luo faintly smiled and nodded her head: "How did your cultivation practice go? Is there any progress?"

Before, she had let Lu Luo drink a cup of Celestial Spirit Water to help her get rid of the impurities within her body. Soon after, she also tossed her a few bottles of crystal stone spirit liquid, on top of getting the services of an expert

like Ling Feng free of charge, if Lu Luo still hadn't made a little progress, then she would really give up.

Lu Luo's entire face was covered with a huge smile, her pair of eyes were bent into a crescent moon shape. She excitedly nodded her head repeatedly: "Yes, yes, yes! This servant is now already a first rank martial artist. I feel exceedingly good! Oh, truly, even in my dreams. this servant never expected that one day, she would also become a martial artist."

On this continent, it was clearly stipulated that a martial artist's position in society, compared to that of an ordinary normal person, was at a higher, more noble level. In addition, after becoming a martial artist, you also have the basic strength for self-protection. No wonder Lu Luo would be this excited.

Ling Feng's stiff face that appeared to have nerve paralysis noiselessly appeared in front of Su Luo. He expressionlessly cast a glance at Su Luo, in an ice-cold tone, he said: "His Highness has arrived."

Sure enough, in the wake of his words, very quickly, Nangong Liuyun's figure appeared in front of Su Luo.

## Chapter 335 – Playboy (6)

---

Under the Chinese Snowball Viburnum tree, the petals of the cherry blossoms which were as white as snow fluttered down, sprinkling the ground.

Nangong Liuyun was dressed in a black brocade robe, the tassels on his jade belt wantonly danced gently in the wind. His face was like the month of the Mid-autumn festival, smiling lightly again and again while looking at her.

The him right now appeared to be respectable, roguishly charming, handsome beyond compare, and full of hidden depths. He had that kind of extreme allure that was a little flaky, but gave off ample aggressiveness.

The sun in the sky was just at its most magnificent, the plants in her courtyard were blooming. The scene was very picturesque, making him appear so handsome that it was as if he just walked out of a painting.

“This king’s Luo girl finally came out from closed door practice.” Nangong Liuyun gazed deeply at Su Luo and said in a teasing tone: “If you hadn’t come out now, then this king was about to enter by smashing the door.”

Saying this, he reached out to hold Su Luo’s hand, and without regard for others, he probed her cultivation.

The Nangong Liuyun before her had an extremely good-looking smile on his face. That kind of smile made people feel dazzled, as if all of a sudden, the sky looked magnificent and splendid with a warm breeze within thousands of miles. It was incomparably brilliant, as if all the air she inhaled was exceedingly fresh and clean.

She was merely in seclusion for a month, why was it that it felt like it was a lifetime ago? It seemed as if it had been a very, very long time, and was as if she had missed him just a little bit?

Su Luo became aware that she was looking at Nangong Liuyun as if her mind

had gone blank. She couldn't help but to inwardly curse at herself.

“Were you waiting for me to come out of seclusion from the start? Why?” Su Luo looked at him and puzzledly asked.

“Haven't seen each other for one or two months, and this king is not allowed to miss you?” Nangong Liuyun hugged her full and slender waistline, as if the action was expected and was a matter-of-fact, of course. The corner of his mouth had a smile, “Not coming earlier is not as good as coming on time. Luo girl is really the number one blessed person under the heavens. The word timely is the one you are rushing to catch.”

Su Luo become increasingly more confused, could it be that today was some huge day, really? Why was it that she didn't even have the slightest impression of this?

“What timely coincidence?” Su Luo looked at him with a perplexed expression on her face.

Nangong Liuyun didn't answer her, he only drew her along by the hand, and stole a kiss from her.

Seeing Su Luo's expression becoming annoyed, the corner of Nangong Liuyun's eyes and the tip of his brows had a smiling expression, like a child that had successfully stolen some sweets. It seemed as if he was in a very cheerful mood: “Let's go, follow this king to our tryst.”

“A tryst?” An unnatural expression flashed across Su Luo's face. She tried to shake off his hand that would not let go, “Who has a relationship with you? Did I promise to go? Quickly release my hand.”

A tryst, when applied to a woman and a man, how ambiguous a way it was to word things. This word would define the relationship between both sides. And it was very obvious that no matter how Nangong Liuyun defined their relationship, she still hadn't reached that degree with him.

Nangong Liuyun's footsteps paused, his cold, clear eyes swept across her body. Before she could return to her senses, that ice-cold, beautiful pair of eyes invoked a smiling expression that was alluring and would entice anyone who saw it, “Wanting to resist but still welcoming, girl, as if this king still

**doesn't understand you? Let's go, stop dilly-dallying."**

**"Rubbish talk!" Su Luo showed that she was not convinced. What was called wanting to resist but still welcoming? How could she have this kind of intent?**

**Nangong Liuyun rather seriously and earnestly examined her: "Want to promote your cultivation and defeat your opponent, no? If you want to, then follow this king and let's go."**

**Su Luo saw his raised eyebrows and lips and the still deadly earnest, old-fashioned, solemn appearance, suddenly, she felt he looked extremely ridiculous. She couldn't bear it and let out a 'pfft' sound of laughter.**

**Nangong Liuyun extended his slender, jointed forefinger and immediately knocked her gently on the head. Rewarding her with a quick knuckle to the head: "What are you laughing at? Laugh at this king again, I will sell you and count the money."**

**"You would be loath to part with me!" Su Luo blurted it out without giving her brain enough time to think it over. Once the words were out of her mouth, after coming awake and becoming aware, she then found that it was improper.**

**According to her and Nangong Liuyun's relationship, this sentence seemed a little ambiguous.**

## Chapter 336 – Playboy (7)

---

Nangong Liuyun was as quick as using a stick to hit a snake, he immediately lifted an eyebrow and looked at her with a faint smile. He smoothly responded to her sentence: “Luo girl really understands this king. Like you said, this king really would be loath to part with you.”

Su Luo had lost this round, and somewhat annoyedly patted her own head. She really had become foolish since being shut-in, to forget Nangong Liuyun, that roguish nature. She even walked into that trap.

Su Luo helplessly sent him a glare, but Nangong Liuyun still appeared improper and hugged her slender waist tightly to him, bringing her to the front of his body.

However, Su Luo shook off his hand, after that, she took a step and walked forward while ignoring Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun rushed to catch up, and walked alongside Su Luo, his tone was extremely fawning and cordial: “Okay, okay, you are already this king’s people, why are you still so easily embarrassed? This king doesn’t mind, why would you care?”

Su Luo was just about to retort her refusal, but when she recalled how thick-skinned and shameless this guy, Nangong Liuyun, could be...She endured it.

Su Luo merely focused on continuing to walk forward.

Going to ignore him, ignore him. The more attention she paid him, the more enthusiastic he became, and so on, without end.

Nangong Liuyun fawningly tugged at her little hand.

Su Luo, with one toss, shook him off, with her face turned away, she cast a glance at him: “I am not interested in you.”

Nangong Liuyun also didn’t get angry, he smiled alluringly with a devilish

charm. He leaned close to her, persistently giving her his selling points: “Such a hard-mouthed girl, it’s obvious you like this king very much, but insist on saying you are not interested. Humph, humph! Let me tell you, this king is the kind of outstanding, elegant, handsomely suave, who knows literature and martial arts, and that shunned debauchery to remain chaste, exceptionally good type of man. Even if you lit a lantern to find one, you still won’t find one this good. Let me tell you, from now on, you should be careful and constantly be mindful of me, else this king will be snatched away by others.”

When Nangong Liuyun was boasting, his tone was full of himself and conceited with a high-spirited expression. It seemed as if he was not the slightest bit embarrassed.

His words struck Su Luo like lightning, making her speechlessly shake her head.

This person was His Highness Prince Jin ah, His Highness Prince Jin! The legendary, unwavering, expedient killer that killed people like cutting grass. His only hobby was to cut off people’s hands and feet, and was bloodthirsty like a devil king. Now, he had this kind of childish manner, simply made her want to cry but lacking the tears, and even more, he was hard to handle.

Su Luo halted her footsteps, supporting her forehead, she sighed: “I beseech you to stop talking, you may not be embarrassed, but I feel ashamed on your behalf.”

Nangong Liuyun gave two ‘humph’ sounds. “You don’t have good vision, girl.”

This girl was really hard to swindle, no matter how he tried to swindle her, he couldn’t deceive her.

In the end, Su Luo was still very curious, therefore she followed him and together, they approached the Dragon Scaled Horse.

Today’s Dragon Scaled Horse was not harnessed to the rack of a carriage, rather, it had a saddle on its back. It heroically stood at the doorway, looking gorgeous and vigorous.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo approach, the Dragon Scaled Horse immediately abandoned its own master and jubilantly tried to move closer to Su Luo. Its massive head incessantly rubbed into Su Luo’s embrace.

Nangong Liuyun's face darkened as he tore the Dragon Scaled Horse away from Su Luo and directly carried Su Luo onto the horse's back.

"I can do it myself." Su Luo pursed her lips and smiled. This man would even be jealous of the Dragon Scaled Horse, he really was very interesting.

In fact, she was aware of why the Dragon Scaled Horse wanted to be close to her.

Last time, when she took the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage back, Su Luo took out a little Celestial Spirit Water and fed it to the Dragon Scaled Horse. Originally she did it as a test, to see whether besides the little divine dragon liking the Celestial Spirit Water, other magical beasts would also like it.

Who knew that only a few mouthfuls of Celestial Spirit Water would get the Dragon Scaled Horse to be on her side.

The Dragon Scaled Horse's attitude towards Su Luo immediately underwent a huge 180 degree turn.

Since then, the Dragon Scaled Horse would follow behind her butt anytime to anywhere. Otherwise, it would use those pair of limpid, bright and huge eyes to look at Su Luo pitifully. Just seeing it would make a person's heart hurt.

## Chapter 337 – Playboy (8)

---

Now, it was also like that, Nangong Liuyun held Su Luo and sat them on its back, the two of them rode together in the same saddle. They were very close to each other, Su Luo tried several times to say that she could ride a horse, but was diverted away from the topic by Nangong Liuyun changing the subject.

At this moment, the Dragon Scaled Horse refused to move. He continuously turned his head to rub against Su Luo. Even Nangong Liuyun was somewhat unable to command it.

When Su Luo saw Nangong Liuyun's dark face, she secretly laughed in her heart. She bent her body and leaned down with her hand, offering the Dragon Scaled Horse the Celestial Spirit Water and fed it into the Dragon Scaled Horse's mouth. After the Dragon Scaled Horse drank, its eyes narrowed in an appearance of enjoying something.

"Now, can we go?" Su Luo smilingly stroked its head. This gluttonous child was really the same as the little divine dragon.

The Dragon Scaled Horse docilely licked her hand, then it let out a neighing sound, and both of its pair of hooves leaped and darted away. Its speed was simply at the peak like a whirlwind, as if it was intentionally currying favor by showing obeisance in front of Su Luo.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth moved slightly, he was somewhat speechless.

He stroked Su Luo's head and let out a sigh. "Look at you girl, in order to get close to this king, you even built a good relationship with my Dragon Scaled Horse beforehand. Still saying you are not interested in this king? Girl, your mouth says no but your heart says yes."

"Don't feel like talking to you." Su Luo lifted her head snubbing him, and

patted the Dragon Scale Horse's head. Immediately, the Dragon Scaled Horse's speed soared once again.

The buildings on both sides constantly fell behind. As fast as lightning, they arrived at their destination.

East Facing Pier.

A luxurious yacht that was about two hundred meters long and thirty meters wide stood still, moored at the mouth of the shore.

The luxurious yacht was imposing and simply looked like a luxurious palace on top of the water.

What made Su Luo surprised was that in this world, the maritime navy vessels were actually developed to this degree?

Nangong Liuyun skillfully pulled Su Luo along by the hand, taking her to on a stroll towards that luxurious yacht.

On the docking platform, a gangplank was slowly lowered from the yacht. Nangong Liuyun led Su Luo, sauntering up that gangplank.

Once they had climbed onto the yacht deck, she found three to four people sitting on the erected chairs chatting away, both male and female. The men's clothing were embroidered and looked magnificent. The women's figures were beautiful, they all appeared bright, neat, and beautiful, extremely attractive to the eye.

Hearing a noise, they uniformly turned their head and looked towards them.

Among them was a kindly intellectual youth who was the first to react. He put down the stuff in his hand, stood up and walked over. With a smile in his eyes, he said: "Nangong, we waited for you for a full six hours. If you still had not come, don't even think about hooking a single Amethyst Thorned fish. Oh, who is this?"

This youth, without regard for others. exchanged greetings with Nangong Liuyun. He turned his head once again, with a smile on his face, he looked at Su Luo. His eyes were full of inquisitiveness.

Nangong Liuyun would also bring a young lady out? Moreover, this Miss was also not the Jade Lake's Fairy?

Nangong Liuyun drew Su Luo by her slender waist even closer to him, in a mild tone of exchanging greetings, he said: “The future Princess Jin, properly give her your greetings.”

“Oh, Princess Jin? Nangong, you’re really quite something! Wordlessly and silently, you found a Princess Jin for yourself. How many beautiful women will inwardly sob tearfully.” This white-robed youth’s countenance was all smiles. He looked like a refined intellectual with an extremely mild and gentle temper.

At this moment, another blue-robed youth came over. His face had a smile and exchanged greetings with Nangong Liuyun: “Oh, seldom is Nangong Liuyun seen bringing a beauty out, did the sun rise in the west today?”

Nangong Liuyun swept him a faint glance, and the blue-robed youth’s shoulder immediately shrank back.

“Call her sister-in-law.” Nangong Liuyun’s gaze swept a glance at those oriole- and swallow-like ladies not far away. His voice was indifferent.

Nangong Liuyun also did not deny it and gave an alluring smile that was devilishly charming. “In any case, this lifetime, you will certainly be this king’s Princess Jin. Once you are exhausted, you will land in this yellow spring (1), see where you can escape to.”

*1) Exhausted you will land in this yellow spring: This could also be referring to and translated as once you are poor, you will want to land in this golden spring of wealth.*

## Chapter 338 – Playboy (9)

---

The blue-robed youth didn't expect that Nangong Liuyun would be this serious. His face froze for a moment in a dumbfounded expression, then, he smiled. In a well-behaved manner, he called Su Luo 'Sister-in-law' and became more affectionate towards her.

"I'm not your sister-in-law, and also, don't have any relation to him. Don't just randomly shout out a title at someone." Su Luo thought about it and pushed Nangong Liuyun away by a step, then followed closely by trying to explain it once thoroughly.

The blue-robed youth, seeing this, suddenly laughed. He lifted an eyebrow towards Nangong Liuyun and laughingly said: "Oh, second older brother, has this not been settled?"

The white-robed youth also followed immediately with a kindly smile: "It seems so. No wonder Nangong Liuyun was so busy recently, to the point even his shadow couldn't be seen, let alone the person."

"Wow!" Clearly, nobody expected that the always outwardly cold Nangong Liuyun would actually declare such a naked confession, and so publicly. Immediately, the people at the scene started to get riled up, pair after pair of probing and measuring eyes gathered on Su Luo's body.

They always thought that Nangong Liuyun, in this lifetime, would just be like this; avoiding debauchery, remaining chaste with his advanced stage of mysophobia, not fond of having women be near him. However, they never anticipated that Nangong Liuyun who didn't sing, would become an instant sensation when he sang (1).

Su Luo heard the joking manner between them, in her heart, she had some doubts.

Nangong Liuyun was what kind of identity? When he was at Su Manor, Su Zian worshipped him like a god, with merely a coughing sound, her cheap old man was like someone being scared by a tiger's roar.

However, the few people in front of her eyes, each and every one of them was very handsome, talented, glowing with health and vigor. If you placed them outside, each and every one of them would be giants among men. Moreover, just looking at their manner, they appeared to be very familiar with Nangong Liuyun, they also called each other brothers. Don't know what the identity of these people was. But, she was certain their background and influence were definitely not small.

At this moment, don't know from where, Beichen Ying popped out, dressed in an all red, embroidered robe. He saw Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo, and barged his way into the crowd around them. His entire face and eyes were full of pure smiles: "Sister-in-law, I just knew that you would come. You coming is simply too right!"

"Uh?" Faced with such an enthusiastic and warm Beichen Ying, as if they very familiar, Su Luo was puzzled. What did he mean by saying that having her come was simply too right?

"What 'who, who'? Bring it here." Beichen Ying lifted an eyebrow, with a self-satisfied smile, he held out his hand.

"Just like you to bother about this little thing, take it!" The blue robed youth on the side humphed twice and tossed a green-crystal stone to Beichen Ying.

So as it turned out, Beichen Ying and the blue robed youth had made a bet about whether Nangong Liuyun would bring Su Luo out, in the end, naturally, it was Beichen Ying who won.

Beichen Ying tried to win favor using someone else's property, and catching that green-colored crystal stone, he gave it to Su Luo: "Sister-in-law, a very small gift on our first meeting, please kindly accept it."

The people here, except for Nangong Liuyun, Su Luo had only ever seen the red-robed Beichen Ying before.

Still recalling the last time when he arrived at Su Manor, he was strutting

around with such a blustering appearance, he scared those people in Su Manor until they wouldn't dare to even breathe out. She remembered that Beichen Ying came from the unfathomable, enigmatic Beichen family.

“Not going to accept a reward that's undeserved, since it was won by you, then you should take it.” Su Luo smiled while waving her hand.

Perhaps as far as others were concerned, a green-colored crystal stone was very precious. Yet, because she had the little divine dragon, and had also accepted Old Chen, who back in the old days had the title of 'king of crystal stones', as a subordinate, therefore, regarding crystal stones, Su Luo had never lacked for them.

However, the others watching did not know this, seeing Su Luo refuse the green-colored crystal stone without even batting an eye, the expression in their eyes showed that their evaluation of her had become higher.

Beichen Ying smiling happily while stuffing the green-colored crystal stone into Su Luo's hand: “Sister-in-law, just take it. This crystal was won by me through a bet, just accept it as an apology for the matter from last time.” Saying this, Beichen Ying snuck a glance at Nangong Liuyun, that appearance was like a mouse having seen a cat.

Su Luo naturally knew what matter he was referring to.

*1) who didn't sing, would become an instant sensation when he sang: is an idiom saying this person never did anything like this before and when he suddenly did it he did in such a way that it shocked people.*

## Chapter 339 – Playboy (10)

---

Before, because of his ambiguous words, that seemed right but were wrong, it caused everyone in Su Manor to misunderstand. It was to the extent that everyone thought His Highness Prince Jin had feelings for Su Qing. This thus led to a series of misunderstandings, until finally, Su Qing flew into a rage from the humiliation and challenged her to a life and death duel.

Su Luo smiled faintly: “It was she, herself, who was too narrow-minded, it had nothing to do with you. You must not take the blame and place it on your own body.”

Beichen Ying stealthily peeked a glance at Nangong Liuyun, seeing his stiff expression, he immediately curled up, shivering. All of a sudden, he took out everything he carried on his body and gifted it to Su Luo: “No need, sister-in-law, you needn’t be so polite. If you continue to be this polite, then it would be someone’s turn to be impolite to me.”

After stuffing it all into Su Luo’s hand, he immediately turned around and slipped away. He ran away faster than a rabbit.

That blue brocade-robed youth had a slight examining look as he glanced at Su Luo. His eyes carried a smile and said to Nangong Liuyun: “Last time, Beichen Ying’s father dragged him by the ears home to make him do penal servitude. Could it be that that was your masterpiece?”

Nangong Liuyun swept him a cold glance, and declined to comment: “He is too noisy.”

The brocade-robed youth was speechless and spread out his hands.

Sure enough, this man was extremely petty and narrow-minded. He wouldn’t even eat a little loss, finished thinking, his gaze again went towards Su Luo, though it had a little less of an examining expression. Now, it had a somewhat

more amiable expression.

In the time it took to speak, the luxurious yacht left the shoreline, setting out and advancing towards the vast ocean.

Nangong Liuyun and that blue-robed youth walked to the side. The two of them seemed to have something to talk about. Su Luo very tactfully walked over to the side with a row of seats that was not far away, and randomly picked an empty chair to sit in. Her gaze roamed to a far away distance, surveying the scenery in the distance.

Now, it was already close to nightfall. Numerous red clouds stretched out as far as the eye could see, like an unrolled, scarlet, silk fabric, the scene was as dazzling as fireworks.

Su Luo was just sitting, very quickly, a person seized the opportunity and sat down by her side. Su Luo turned her head back to look, and saw that the person who came was Beichen Ying, someone she was familiar with.

Su Luo had a very good impression of this lively, unaffected, red-robed youth, that at the pivotal moment, had supported her.

“Why aren’t you going over to play together with everyone?” This dreaded president of the Mercenary Union that had frightened everyone, was now smiling until two of his little canine teeth showed, looking like the sunny boy next door. However, Su Luo knew that if this person was to be vengeful, he was also a master killer who cut down people decisively.

Su Luo smiled faintly: “Not familiar and also not accustomed to it.”

Beichen Ying held his arms while looking at Su Luo. Having heard what she said, he suddenly smiled and leaned close to her side: “Sister-in-law need not be accustomed to it. Letting them get used to you will be just fine.”

These words were said full of self-confidence like making a solemn vow, clearly, it was because of honoring Nangong Liuyun. Calling Su Luo with some inquisitiveness, he continued to ask: “Able to become Nangong Liuyun’s sworn brother, they are also not some simple characters right?”

“Oh? On your way here, did Nangong Liuyun not mention it?” A touch of astonishment flashed through Beichen Ying’s eyes. It seemed to him, since

Nangong Liuyun cared so much about Su family's fourth girl, then surely they will tell each other everything, right?

Su Luo recalled that on the way here, Nangong Liuyun had sat behind, her constantly trying to provoke and tease her. A touch of scarlet flashed across her face. She made a sound of clearing her throat and sternly said: "Maybe it was because he forgot? Having you tell me is also the same."

Beichen Ying also felt that it was necessary to fill in the information for Su Luo once thoroughly.

"Has sister-in-law heard of one city, two palace halls, three palaces, four sacred places?"

"One city, two palace halls, three palaces, four sacred places?" Su Luo's eyes flashed and somewhat astonishingly glanced at Beichen Ying. Soon after, a trace of understanding flashed across Su Luo's beautiful eyes.

No wonder these youths could become sworn brothers with Nangong Liuyun. So as it turned out, every one of their background was not very small.

One city, two palace halls, three palaces, four sacred places, it was this continent's most formidable ten huge powers. Among them, Purgatory City was the number one power.

## Chapter 340 – Playboy (11)

---

The two palace halls were separated into the Beichen palace hall and the Luoyu palace hall. Beichen Ying came from the unfathomable, enigmatic Beichen Palace.

The three Palaces were separated into the Jade Lake Palace, the Green Jade Palace and Central Palace. The Jade Lake's fairy was the Jade Lake Palace's, this generation's, most favored princess.

The four royal families were the Nangong family, Anye family, Ouyang family and Xuanyuan family.

Not to speak of the existence of that one city, two palace halls, three palaces and only mentioning just that four great families.

On this Blue Sky Continent, the four great families each controlled four great countries. Like the Nangong family who was in control of the nation of Eastern Ling, they encouraged good governance, and were thus unflinching.

Beichen Ying pointed to that blue-robed youth and introduced him, saying: "Don't just look at his happy and enthusiastic appearance when dealing with anyone. This joker comes from the Green Jade Palace, as a child, he was extraordinarily talented, gifted and smart. His strength is so great, to the point of astonishing people. Since he was small, he ate medicinal pills as if eating a meal, now, he is already at the peak of sixth rank. Lan Xuan, this guy's, strength, is not that much different from Nangong Liuyun's."

Peak of sixth rank? Su Luo somewhat astonishingly looked at that blue-robed youth. Never expected that his strength was at the peak of sixth rank, really someone she must not be contemptuous of.

"In addition, that person who is fond of wearing white is Anye Ming, the South Nation's third royal prince." Beichen Ying pointed to the last person, the white-

robed youth who had previously stood up and spoken to them, and advised by earnestly saying: “Don’t just look at his warm, gentle, sleek appearance, and feel that he is easy to get along with. That branch is the same as Nangong Liuyun, he absolutely is a master at being two-faced. Therefore, if you have nothing to do, talk less with him. It is so as to avoid being scammed by him and still help him count the money.”

Su Luo looked at Beichen Ying’s grumbling with a deeply ingrained, long-standing, resentful expression on his face. She secretly laughed in her heart. It seemed like Beichen Ying had been scammed by this Anye Ming and still had helped him count the money before. Moreover, the number of times he got scammed was absolutely unlikely to be small.

“How does sister-in-law feel about me? My looks are also considered at the top of the jade tree, outstanding, elegant, with universal appeal. A flower which sees me will bloom, right?”

“Eh...” Three black lines appeared on Su Luo’s forehead.

It really was that people who crowd together were just like birds of a feather flocking together. Nangong Liuyun’s sworn brothers were just like him, without any sense of shame and thick-skinned.

Beichen Ying was entirely unaware of Su Luo’s inner ridicule of him. He excitedly continued to boast non-stop: “Temperament is like this, if you want sunshine, then there is sunshine. If you want gentleness, then there is gentleness, stormy or light breeze. What you want to do, will do it. Sister-in-law, you agree this is correct, right?”

“This...” He really didn’t understand what made Su Luo most puzzled was why this child was boasting like this in front of her? Managed to seem as if he was selling himself?

However, Beichen Ying very quickly helped her clear up the confusion: “Since Sister-in-law also thinks I am a good person, then you should speak a few sentences of good words on my behalf in front of Nangong Liuyun, okay?”

Please, the high and mighty Venerable president of the Mercenary Union, don’t use this kind of limpid, bright eyes that looked so pitifully to besch her, okay?

Su Luo held her forehead and dumbfoundedly said: “ Don’t call me ‘sister-in-law’. I really don’t have any relationship with Nangong Liuyun. Furthermore, you are his sworn brother, your words are even more useful than mine.”

“Sister-in-law, don’t crack jokes. In front of Nangong, one sentence from you is equal to one hundred sentences from me. Sister-in-law, I beseech you, say something to Nangong so that I won’t once again be dragged home to practice Sound Wave martial arts...” Beichen Ying had a face of having long suffered, that was desperate from depression, as if that Sound Wave martial arts tormented him very miserably.

Su Luo was helpless from lack of a better option: “I already told you, don’t call me ‘sister-in-law’.”

Beichen Ying calling her like this, made it seem as if her status has successfully changed to Princess Jin, Nangong Liuyun’s wife.

“Then, sister-in-law, can you please just help me.” Beichen Ying had a wailing-at-a-funeral expression on his little face. His rosy, glossy lips opened and closed, and his watery, limpid eyes which were like peach blossoms, looked at Su Luo, waiting anxiously.

## Chapter 341 – Playboy (12)

---

“Perhaps you are mistaken about something? My relationship with Nangong Liuyun is absolutely not what you guys are imagining. Don’t confuse one thing with another.” Su Luo simply could not explain it clearly enough for him to understand. She had a feeling she was only making it worse.

Beichen Ying had a considering expression as he stared at Su Luo: “He still hasn’t caught you from the chase yet? Hey, Sister-in-law, Nangong Liuyun is a good person. Why is it that you won’t accept him?”

Su Luo suddenly was at a loss for words, this child’s words were really blunt that it was cute, making it hard for her to resist.

Beichen Ying warmly looked at Su Luo: “Really, Nangong Liuyun is a good person, a guy like him completely does not lack for women. But for so many years, he had always avoided debauchery and remained chaste. He never let any other women even get near him. Sister-in-law, this is simply too rare and hard to come by. You tell me, am I right or not?”

To remain chaste, these kind of words being used on Nangong Liuyun’s body, Su Luo felt it was somewhat embarrassing and frustrating.

Only, saying that Nangong Liuyun remained chaste, these words seemed somewhat inappropriate?

Su Luo said it very bluntly: “Don’t tell me, a woman never appeared by his side.” Then, what was the Jade Lake’s fairy considered as?

Beichen Ying seriously looked at her, sincerely and earnestly teaching her: “A guy like him, if a woman was given an opportunity, then she wouldn’t be able to escape. Up to now, he only gave one person this opportunity, and that’s all. You think about it, isn’t it like this?”

Beichen Ying’s words, made the soft area closest to her heart tremble

slightly.

Beichen Ying's tone when speaking was unusually serious and gentle, for a split second, it made her feel as if he was really telling the truth.

However, in Su Luo's mind, unavoidably, that exceedingly refined and beyond beautiful face that was above the common populace, appeared.

All of a sudden, she smiled, though her smile seemed forced: "Since you guys are childhood friends who grew up together, you couldn't possibly not know the Jade Lake's fairy right?"

This person, chased after her to kill her several times. She would absolutely not let her get away with it. At that time, she and the Jade Lake's fairy would not be able to exist together. When the time comes, whose side would Nangong Liuyun, who spoiled and indulged the Jade Lake's fairy, stand on? It was truly hard to say.

A vexed expression flashed through Beichen Ying's eyes. He silently breathed out a sigh, his expression was heavy and yet earnest: "Her, uhm? He he, if Nangong Liuyun had given her an opportunity, then how could the position of Princess Jin be empty? To tell you the truth, the Jade Lake Palace, all along, had intended them to be connected through marriage. Eastern Ling's emperor also had the same notion. The only person who would not agree to it is Nangong Liuyun."

Su Luo looked at him with astonishment and some disbelief.

After all, the scene in the Sunset Mountain Range at that time, had provided her with an impression that was too deep.

That pair was like the jade annulus, like a painting, they were inseparably in love. She smiled at him, he whispered softly to her...this picturesque scene had all along been a deep thorn in her heart. Ordinarily, it was silent, at the most critical time, it would run out to punch her in the solar plexus.

Beichen Ying patted her shoulder, giving her ample encouragement: "Before, why Nangong would refuse her, I don't know. Yet, since meeting you, his entire person has changed. His aura has become less gloomy, has become more spirited and full of life."

**“Wasn’t he always a master without the slightest scruple and despising worldly conventions? From what I see, he is living quite well.” An image of Nangong Liuyun’s manner and appearance of always teasing and making fun of her emerged in her head.**

**Whenever they met, at which time did he not resemble a rakish hooligan teasing her? It was completely unlike what Beichen Ying said about him being that great and amazing.**

**Beichen Ying slowly shook his head, as his gaze looked to a distant place. Quietly and unmovingly, he looked at the clear, gleaming sunlight that was reflected from the waves in the distance. A long time later, he faintly said: “You don’t understand, he hasn’t been happy since he was little. Before he was eight years old, he almost completely sealed himself up. Not listening, not looking, not asking and not speaking, as if completely shutting himself away. Afterwards, he slowly got a little better.”**

## Chapter 342 – Fright on board (1)

---

“Eh?” That kind of alluring and devilishly charming Nangong Liuyun, in his childhood, had actually shut himself up? Su Luo’s shock was written all over her face.

“Yes, it had something to do with the death of his mother who was an imperial concubine. But, this matter must wait until he wants to tell you himself. I cannot tell you.” Beichen Ying, after saying this, he stood up. Finally, he gazed deeply at Su Luo. His tone had a thread of meaning to entrust a task to her: “Su Luo, that Nangong could open wide his inner heart to someone, it is not easy for him. You should stop hurting him again, okay?”

Su Luo watched Beichen Ying’s back as he left, and bowed her head to ponder everything deeply.

She couldn’t tell at all that Nangong Liuyun’s heart had a shadow purely by his appearance. Was it because she simply did not pay attention to his mood, or that he hid it too well? In addition, there was that wound on his body...it should also be related to his childhood, right? He would rather die of an illness than seek medical help, did it also have something to do with this matter?

Su Luo’s brain was full of questions, however, Beichen Ying unfortunately explicitly informed her that he could not say it. If she wanted to know, she had no choice but to go look for Nangong Liuyun.

“Bang——” A sharp and clear burst of sound exploded above Su Luo’s forehead. Su Luo angrily lifted up her eyes and encountered Nangong Liuyun’s handsome face that carried a smile.

“What are you thinking about that made you this enthralled? Be careful you don’t get pushed into the water and don’t even know it.” Nangong Liuyun’s tone was low, deep and enticing. His smile was neat, like the clouds softly drifting over

the surface of a lake, giving people a very comfortable feeling.

Su Luo blankly and foolishly looked at him, the him right now appeared to be very relaxed and easygoing. Yet, he still gave off a kind of outstanding, extraordinary sense of being a giant among men.

Originally, she had always thought that Nangong Liuyun was a person who despised worldly conventions, doing as he pleased without the slightest scruple. But ever since she heard Beichen Ying's words from a moment ago, afterwards, when Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun again, her gaze couldn't help but carry an expression of probing and sizing him up.

His handsome face had a smiling expression, that gaze was beautiful and secluded like a deep pond. Yet, it was also clear like a deep, pure spring.

Normally, he would always be cold and didn't smile often.

His smile could be separated very clearly, it was almost entirely different.

Under a violent rage, it was a coldly fierce, demonic smile, and when he was teasing her, it was a devilishly charming, shallow smile.

Apart from these kinds, she hadn't seen him smile once.

The him right now had both hands held behind his back, the corner of his robe flipping over, like the only stand alone, elegant son of nobility. His eyes carried a smile which was filled with clear water as they watched her. The smile at the corner of his lips got even bigger, unexpectedly, it even had a hint of warmth like springtime.

His facial features were exquisite beyond compare, simply world-shaking. This smile gave Su Luo a sense of a kind of illusionary beauty that could cause the downfall of a city. As if, once she falls in, she would be so intoxicated that she would be unwilling to wake up again.

This kind of him was really like what Beichen Ying had said? That he had a piece of tragic past that he did not want to recollect? That he had a childhood where he shut himself in?

Su Luo gazed at him in a daze, momentarily, she didn't know what she should say and what kind of manner she should use to face him.

“Is this king that good-looking? Actually made you dazed from looking?” The corner of his mouth hooked into a devilishly charming, shallow smile.

Sure enough, it was this kind of despising worldly conventions Nangong Liuyun that she was most familiar with.

Su Luo slowly exhaled a deep mouthful of air. Originally, she wanted to glare at him, but recalling Beichen Ying’s words, she felt as if she really didn’t treat him well, and changed her tone of voice: “Are you a peacock? All day long, you are this narcissistic and also unashamed of it.”

“This is not narcissism, rather, it is self-confidence, understand?” Nangong Liuyun tapped her head.

“It is just narcissism, there is no one else more narcissistic when compared to you.” Su Luo let out two snorting sounds.

Nangong Liuyun also did not get angry, it seemed as if his mood was very good. He pulled on her hand and took her along to walk towards the crowd of people.

Seeing the endless ocean outside, Nangong Liuyun lazily asked a sentence: “Do you know how to swim?”

Su Luo nodded her head: “Barely know a little.”

## Chapter 343 – Fright on board (2)

---

Didn't know from where Beichen Ying popped out again, and he winked at Su Luo: "You shouldn't be afraid, Nangong Liuyun is very amazing. Even if the Dragon King (1) from the myths invited you to the Crystal Palace as a guest, Nangong Liuyun will also fish you right back up."

Su Luo inquisitively looked at Nangong Liuyun.

A person's energy would eventually reach a limit, why was it that he knew everything? How was he proficient at everything?

Nangong Liuyun smugly lifted an eyebrow and gave two light coughing sounds. He repressed the self-satisfaction at the corner of his lips: "Don't waste your words with him, let's go, I'll bring you over to play a little."

Seeing his smug expression, suddenly, what Beichen Ying said appeared in Su Luo's mind.

Beichen Ying said, since meeting you, his entire person has changed, become someone more alive.

Was this kind of Nangong Liuyun what you would call being more alive? Then, when he was a child...the sight of a little boy carved from jade-like gems, with a taut little face, sealing himself off in a world of darkness, appeared in Su Luo's mind. Su Luo's heart suddenly started to ache, and her expression froze.

"What's wrong?" Nangong Liuyun detected that her expression had become strange, and he asked a little nervously.

Just this could make the noble and indifferent him so nervous? Su Luo did not answer, and instead changed the topic. Her brows and eyes bent in a clear and light smiling expression as she gazed at him: "What games are you bringing me to play?"

Just at this moment, Anye Ming, who sat in front of a small table playing chess at the side, put down a chess piece: “Checkmate.”

Sitting opposite of him was Lan Xuan, who vexedly grabbed his hair. Ultimately, he still had no strategy to try and carelessly messed up the chess pieces on the board: “Ah, don’t want to continue, not going to play this, it’s making me bored to death!”

Anye Ming glowered at Lan Xuan: “You lost and just destroyed the chess game, don’t have good chess manners. Humph, humph.”

Lan Xuan leaned back into his chair, and lazily shot a glance at Anye Ming: “Beating me and you get so proud? When it comes to playing chess, Nangong Liuyun could throw you to a few streets away. If you have the ability, go beat him at chess.”

Nangong Liuyun knew how to play chess and also had superb chess skills? Su Luo’s inquisitive gaze landed on Nangong Liuyun’s body.

Nangong Liuyun languidly reclined on a deck chair, his sword-like eyebrow lifted slightly, but he did not speak.

Beichen Ying saw that Su Luo was curious and attending to her, explained: “Nangong’s chess skill is the most exquisite, when he was eight years old, at that time, he played chess against the scholars at the Imperial Hanlin Academy University until every one of them lost and fled. Since then, his skills have no rival, but also because of this, he washed his hands off from playing chess. From that time on, he never played chess again.”

Nangong Liuyun’s phoenix eyes were closed, faint sunlight shone on his body. His slender eyebrows and pure white skin had a slight luster that seemed to be flowing. The sumptuousness of his whole body, even though his eyes were closed, still made a person unable to move their gaze away.

Right now, he seemed to have sunk into a deep sleep and hadn’t heard what Beichen Ying said. His face didn’t have any change in expression.

However, having heard what was said, Su Luo was inevitably speechless.

Wasn’t the eight-year-old Nangong Liuyun still a closed off child? Unexpectedly, he could still play chess to the point of making the scholars at

Imperial Hanlin Academy University lose and flee? How large and intelligent was this guy's brain?

No wonder his favorite pastime was to ridicule people through sarcasm. He calculated his schemes and machinations completely with numerous layers and endless amounts. As it turned out, those stratagems, as far as he was concerned, were like eating a meal or drinking water. It was that simple.

“Oh, that's right, where is this yacht heading to?” Now, Su Luo finally had a good opportunity to ask.

Before, Nangong Liuyun did not tell her any of the details, she also didn't carefully ask before being pulled here by him. Now, only after the yacht had sailed for a long time, did she finally have time to question them properly.

Beichen Ying was simply somewhat speechless: “Sister-in-law, do you not even know about the once a year fishing event for Amethyst Thorned Fish?”

Having only arrived in this world for a few months, Su Luo slowly shook her head: “You tell it to me in detail, before, I was always locked in at Su Manor, so not very familiar with the matters on this continent.”

*1) The Dragon King: This refers to the Dragon King from the Chinese mythological story written called Journey to the West. They are dragons that with a sneeze could cause rain, and they live in the Crystal Palace within the ocean as rulers. There are four dragon kings that ruled the four seas, which were named based on the four directions.*

## Chapter 344 – Fright on board (3)

---

Beichen Ying expressed that he clearly understood her words, and very kindheartedly thoroughly explained it once for her: “The body of an Amethyst Thorned fish contains rich spirit power. The spirit power from one Amethyst Thorned fish has the same amount of spirit power as one piece of green-colored crystal stone. As a result, everyone on the continent wants to catch an Amethyst Thorned fish.”

Beichen Ying paused for a moment, then continued to explain: “However, the Amethyst Thorned fish is very clever and rarely can be seen normally. Only on the night of July 15th would they gather around the periphery of the Amethyst Thorned Island on the East Sea. Thus, if you want to capture an Amethyst Thorned fish, this opportunity only comes once a year.”

No wonder initially, when she and Nangong Liuyun had arrived, Anye Ming had said that sentence in complaint. So as it turned out, today’s mission was to capture some Amethyst Thorned fishes.

“Why would it only happen on the day of July 15th?” Su Luo clearly did not understand. Was July 15th a very special day?

“Nobody knows the answer to this mystery. If people know, then very likely no one needs to wait for this day every year.” Beichen Ying told it as it is.

“Will there be a lot of people going?” Su Luo curiously asked.

One Amethyst Thorned fish was equivalent to the spirit power in a green-colored crystal stone.

A green-colored crystal stone on the continent was quite rare. The market price was five thousand gold coins. Then, this once a year gathering to catch fish ought to be very lively and bustling with excitement, right?

“No, the number of people would unlikely be many.” Beichen Ying

explained, “It’s because not just everyone can travel across the areas of water filled with waterspouts to reach the Amethyst Thorned Island. There are only a few luxurious yachts in the entire Eastern Ling empire that can cross the waterspouts.”

Waterspouts? Su Luo was just about to ask, but saw Nangong Liuyun suddenly open his phoenix eyes. A cold ray of light flashed through his eyes. Suddenly, he reached out his hand and with one swoop, he immediately scooped Su Luo into his embrace.

“You——” Su Luo hadn’t finished speaking when she felt a severe jolt come from the hull of the ship.

Su Luo was unable to stand stably, all of a sudden, she bumped into Nangong Liuyun’s extremely strong chest. Her nose was extremely sore from knocking into him, that blood almost flowed from her nose.

Su Luo was still considered to be one of the lucky ones. On the side, those oriole-and swallow-like women who were brought onboard by Beichen Ying, they were originally sitting on the chairs chatting, now, they were sent flying into mid-air by the violent hit on the boat.

When the yacht dropped with the force, they were all mercilessly thrown onto the deck. This fall nearly shattered all the bones in their bodies into pieces. They moaned unceasingly for a very long time; they weren’t able to crawl up.

However, it was still unfinished.

The yacht dropped down and very quickly, was lifted high up to float above, almost flying into mid-air. And once again, it heavily dropped onto the water’s surface, and it continuously looped in this cycle of motion. The deck was shaking so violently such that simply nobody could stand on it.

Those few oriole-and swallow-like women, whose bodies still hadn’t crawled up, were once again ruthlessly thrown up high and again fell to the deck. They just resembled some playthings that nature was toying with in the palm of its hand.

Between these powerful shakes, the yacht again become stable.

A heavy and imposing expression flashed through both Anye Ming and Lan Xuan's face at this time. Both of them, with very quick steps, walked towards the front of the deck. Beichen Ying also followed after them. He walked a few steps and again turned sideways to look at Nangong Liuyun: "Is second older brother not coming?"

Nangong Liuyun calmly and composedly played with Su Luo's hair, and leisurely said: "The two of them are more than sufficient."

Beichen Ying forced a smile and rubbed his nose. He made a wry face towards Su Luo and happily took off towards the two people with a bounce.

It seemed to Su Luo, this president of the Mercenary Union was practically the big boy next door that never grew up.

Seeing that Beichen Ying had left, Su Luo turned her head around to ask curiously: "Is this here the areas of water with waterspouts?"

Nangong Liuyun was calm and unruffled in the midst of chaos as he tidied up her slightly disarrayed hair for her. There was a touch of a tenderness on his face, as he shallowly smiled and said: "This is merely the beginning and nothing more. Are you afraid?"

## Chapter 345 – Fright on board (4)

---

Su Luo's beautiful pupils roamed, while she lifted an eyebrow and smiled: "What's to be afraid of? My swimming technique is pretty good, want to have a race with me?"

Nangong Liuyun's intoxicating, fluid glance could move heartstrings. He spoilingly and indulgently rubbed her head: "Little crow's beak (1), I hope what you said will not hit the mark."

Could the implication be that this huge luxurious yacht could still sink?

Su Luo stuck out her tongue and poked her head out of Nangong Liuyun's embrace to explore. She looked towards where Beichen Ying and them were, and somewhat curiously asked: "What are they doing?"

"Suppressing the waterspouts." Nangong Liuyun led Su Luo along by the hand, his mood was extremely relaxed: "Do you want to go and have a look? These few guys normally live like princes, it's rare for them to use their strength. We ought to have a good look, there are not many opportunities of this kind."

The always terse, laconic and 'silence is golden' Nangong Liuyun would only say long sentences in front of Su Luo. Also, only she was worth him spending a lot of patience to come over to entice and coax her.

Since this was a rare opportunity, naturally, she would not miss it. Su Luo hurriedly nodded her head. She cast Nangong Liuyun's hand aside and ran towards the place where Beichen Ying and them were located.

That place was at the bow of the ship, it could let her clearly see the situation on the sea surface up ahead.

Nangong Liuyun pampering and spoilingly followed behind her, at any time, he was prepared to protect her well. Yet, he completely disregarded the pile

of women lying on the ground with almost all the bones in their bodies shattered into pieces.

Su Luo could clearly see, that ahead, for as far as the eye could see, there were huge whirlpools that appeared on the sea surface. They looked like the wide open, bloody maw of a beast of prey showing off their strength by casting sidelong glances at them.

In the distance, Su Luo saw a ship that was dodging left and right, but finally, it was still swept up by the waterspout. It disappeared completely in a flash, not leaving behind even a bit of a trace.

That ship was about fifty meters long. Although it wasn't comparable to their current yacht, it also wasn't considered that much smaller. However, with just the effort of the blink of an eye, it was engulfed completely. This made Su Luo unable to help but to start to be more serious and prudent.

"Afraid?" Nangong Liuyun calmly stood by her side, he reached out his hand to encircle her waist and fastened her to his chest.

Threads of silken hair which were black as ink and were like ribbons, poured down in torrents. A light breeze brushed past, bringing a burst of a good scent that was the sweet scent of jasper flowers. He looked at her deeply and enticingly, unblinkingly watching her. It appeared as if he was looking at the most precious treasure.

Su Luo looked at him, then turned her head again to look at the waterspouts that reached the sky.

The rolled-up waves on the sea surface were like hundreds of flowers, forcing the huge yacht to lean east, then almost fall to the west. The huge waves that hit the hull caused an earth-shattering water screen, sending out bursts of booms and rumbling sounds. They were surrounded by perils which almost couldn't be avoided or fled from.

Those black waterspouts seemed to be terrifyingly sinister and murderous-looking.

In front of nature's anger, at the time where the large waves covered the sky, mankind just seemed so insignificant.

Su Luo looked ahead, and indifferently said: “Not that frightening.” Because with him here, he wouldn’t let her have an accident.

Just at this moment, the originally steady hull of the yacht, all of a sudden, shuddered violently. Huge waves, one after another, again rushed over to attack. Those huge waves that covered the sky swirled the yacht up high and once again threw it down heavily.

With Nangong Liuyun acting as her shield, Su Luo nestled into his side, her body actually didn’t even move a little bit.

While those few women brought by Beichen Ying and them had long ago taken the rope the sailors tossed to them.

One end of the rope was tied to the hull of the yacht, while the other was tied around their waist. Thus, even though it would be extremely painful to be thrown up high and fell down, but at least, they wouldn’t be thrown off the ship. They could still save their life.

In this perilous situation, Su Luo’s gaze landed upon Anye Ming and Lan Xuan’s body.

*1) crow’s beak: A person who made an inauspicious remark.*

## Chapter 346 – Fright on board (5)

---

Only at this moment did she find out, that Anye Ming had the water attribute and Lan Xuan had the wind attribute.

Anye Ming's eyes narrowed slightly as he condensed all the spirit strength in his body. The resulting radiance seemed to contain an inexhaustible force, directly containing the waterspouts ahead of them. This caused the sea surface to become tranquil.

And Lan Xuan followed with controlling the wind speed in their surroundings. He concentrated all the wind speed to the rear of the yacht, making the yacht advance forward with great speed.

Since this was area of water filled with waterspouts, then there wouldn't be merely one waterspout, rather, it was continuous and with no end. It was rows on top of rows, practically unable to see the end.

With regards to Anye Ming's strength, he was unable to control all of the waterspouts, but he could control the ones within the range of one hundred meters in front of them on the sea surface.

Therefore, the scene right now was established by Anye Ming concentrating his spirit powers to open up a straight line of tranquil areas of water that was one hundred meters long and fifty meters wide.

Lan Xuan, meanwhile, hastened the wind speed to blow the yacht to move at its best and fastest speed.

In this situation where the huge waves overflowed to the sky, wanting to create a region of tranquil areas of water, what degree of difficulty must it be?

In less than a quarter of an hour, Anye Ming's face was coated in a thin layer of perspiration and his complexion had also become paler.

Lan Xuan's complexion was not that much better than Anye Ming's. His expression had a touch of being in a difficult situation.

But the energy they sacrificed was worth it, because even if the surroundings were full of huge waves that covered the sky from endless waterspouts, yet their yacht continued to advance forward at a smooth and rapid speed. It wasn't being thrown around left and right like before, causing injury and deaths among the crew.

Under this kind of situation and silence.

"Ah——" A sound of alarm was suddenly shouted out from among the crowd of people.

Su Luo looked towards the source of the sound, momentarily, her expression became a little complicated.

To the left side, not far away, a ship sailed continuously towards their direction.

Su Luo guessed, the other side might have seen their yacht float across the sea surface in a straight line on a calm sea, and thought that this was a route to flee for their lives. As a result, even if they were slapped around by the huge waves, they would still try to draw close to their side.

The other side, with great difficulty, arrived behind the yacht. However, before they could give voice to their joy, in an instant, they were swept up by a huge waterspout into the darkness of the underworld!

It was a pity that the other side did not know, this area of tranquil water was not naturally created by the heavens, rather, it was brought about by an expert water element mage. Furthermore, the sustainable time was over in a blink of an eye.

After their yacht sailed past, that tranquil area naturally was again restored into a treacherous waterspouts.

It was unfortunate that the other side had strived for a long time to finally arrive right behind the yacht, but was still buried at sea.

Su Luo frowned slightly: "Even though everyone knows that to cross the areas

of water filled with waterspouts is very treacherous, why would they still come to throw away their lives?”

It seemed to her that people who could cross this body of water were like Anye Ming and Lan Xuan kind of people. One was a water system expert, another was a wind system expert, both of them acting in concert were able to get them safely through.

Nangong Liuyun smiled while shaking his head: “Human beings will die for riches just as birds will for food.”

Su Luo thought about it and felt that it was just like this. On this continent, how difficult was it to find the green crystal stone, but one Amethyst Thorned fish was equivalent to the value of one piece of green-colored crystal stone. And it was also an opportunity that came only once a year, if you could cross the waterspouts to catch an Amethyst Thorned fish, even if it was merely one fish, you would have also made a fortune.

Nangong Liuyun faintly smiled while lifting an eyebrow and lightly said: “Actually, how could Amethyst Thorned fish be hooked so easily?”

“It isn’t easy to hook?” Wasn’t it merely a fish that swam in water? If you couldn’t hook one, then couldn’t you just throw a net to catch it?

With one glance. Nangong Liuyun was able to see though Su Luo’s thoughts and slowly shook his head: “An Amethyst Thorned fish, how intelligent is it? How sharp is its teeth? How could a fishnet trap it? Only if it wants to take the bait, otherwise, nobody could capture it.”

## Chapter 347 – Fright on board (6)

---

Unexpectedly, there were additional things she needed to pay attention to? Then, looks like it would be very difficult to catch one.

“However, you needn’t be worried.” Nangong Liuyun gave off a wicked radiance that was dazzlingly beautiful and devilishly charming, “This king’s little princess has always had good luck. Other people might not be able to catch any, but Luo’er will certainly return from the journey well-rewarded.”

“How could it be possible!” Su Luo sent him a glare, “Don’t have such high expectations for me, otherwise you will be very disappointed.”

Nangong Liuyun used his hands to stand up, he calmly said: “Time after time, when has Luo girl let this king be disappointed? Therefore, this king has very, very high expectations for you.”

“Don’t feel like paying you any attention.” Su Luo snorted.

Actually, truth be told, in her former life and this one, she didn’t even know how to fish. Let alone going to hook such a full-of-spirit-power Amethyst Thorned fish. Simply thinking about it gave her a headache.

Anye Ming and Lan Xuan’s thin layer of perspiration condensed into bead size, and the two of them tumbled down. In a short time, they looked extremely exhausted.

Su Luo poked Nangong Liuyun’s arm: “Aren’t you going to go up and lend a hand?”

Nangong Liuyun fiddled with Su Luo’s hair and unhurriedly let out a hum: “This king is busy keeping Luo girl company, where would I have the time to bother with them?”

Su Luo was immediately speechless, at this kind of dangerous time, this guy

could be so careless as to tease her. She really should not use common sense to reason with him.

Fortunately, Anye Ming and Lan Xuan both worked hard and did not fall short. Even though they were frighteningly exhausted, nevertheless, they persevered with their teeth clenched.

Probably after about an hour later, the body of water in front of them became dead calm. Under the light of the sun, the clear and crystalline water gleamed from the reflected rays.

Who could have anticipated that in the deepest part of the waterspout-filled waters, there would be such tranquil waters, as if heaven and earth had become one. Birds were flying and fishes were jumping, the cool breeze blew gently and not a wave rippled.

Under the sunshine, the sky was clear and the air was pure. The waves were arranged like smooth lengths of silk cloths, coming slowly by sliding, then leaving again evenly. It gave people a kind of serene, peaceful and quiet feeling.

Compared to just now, being surrounded by the perilous areas of water full of waterspouts they was completely two opposite situations, a difference like heaven and earth.

Anye Ming and Lan Xuan, both of them were completely lacking in form as they dropped down to sit on the deck, gasping large mouthfuls of air and panting coarsely.

Their clothing was soaked through with perspiration from head to toe. They now appeared battered and exhausted, so weary that they couldn't even speak. They only continued to breathe in large mouthfuls of fresh air.

“Oh yeah, at last, we have finally crossed through.” Didn't know from where Beichen Ying came out from, he very kindly extended each of them a cup of fresh water, but also continued to grumble: “Needless for me to say to you guys, last year, it only took a quarter of an hour to cross, unexpectedly this year, it took an hour. Do you guys not feel any shame?”

Lan Xuan directly sent a kick towards him: “You, hey, shut up for me, your daddy! Last year, Nangong Liuyun put on a one-man show, of course it was

effortless. You have the ability, then next year you do it.”

It was all very well to talk, but doing it was another matter. Last year, seeing Nangong Liuyun, that kind of effortless, at ease and calm manner, made them think it was very simple. Didn't expect that once they took over the position, they would find out how difficult it was to control the waterspouts and the yacht speed.

Beichen Ying was nimble as a rabbit, easily avoiding the kick and pouted his brilliantly red lips, saying: “What's so difficult about this? Next year, I and sister-in-law together, absolutely will beat you guys' speed.”

When Beichen Ying finished speaking, with a face eagerly attentive and trying to get the desired result, smiled towards Su Luo. His smiling expression was so radiant that only his teeth showed, while his eyes could not be seen, “Sister-in-law, you also agree right? Next year, the two of us will partner up and let them see.”

Su Luo hadn't even replied before Lan Xuan rolled his eyes at Beichen Ying, saying: “That's enough, enough already, just your little schemes, who doesn't know. Openly shouting out for Sister-in-law to partner together with you, when ultimately, the one exerting himself, isn't it still Nangong?”

Beichen Ying's thoughts were laid bare, but he didn't get angry and merely gave two humphs: “Don't you guys underestimate Sister-in-law. If I was to tell, you guys will be scared to death.”

## Chapter 348 – Fright on Board (7)

---

In a single brush stroke's worth of time, Nangong Liuyun suddenly came and cut in with a line: "That can certainly be arranged. It's decided then, next year, it will just be you and Luo girl. This king will not interfere."

Just that girl?

Anye Ming and Lan Xuan glanced at Su Luo doubtfully.

According to the information they received, this fourth miss from the Su family was proclaimed as a good-for-nothing after the result of her spirit test at the age of five. Later on, although she had concealed her strength and secretly cultivated, she was still merely at the strength of a third rank.

Merely at the level of a third rank, even with Beichen Ying as a partner, how could they be able to traverse across this territory full of waterspouts in a situation without Nangong Liuyun's help? Was this a joke?

Even the two of them, who were both sixth rank in cultivation, were exhausted to the max, alright?

Anye Ming and Lan Xuan both somewhat humorously shook their heads.

Love truly made people blind. They never thought that someone as wise and far-sighted as Nangong, would also have such muddled moments.

Su Luo originally wanted to flatly reject it, but once she saw both Anye Ming and Lan Xuan's expressions of complete disbelief, if she was to flatly refuse now, would she not be taken lightly by them?

While she was hesitating, Beichen Ying had already agreed.

Compared to Anye Ming and Lan Xuan, Beichen Ying's understanding of Su Luo was a little deeper. After his initial shock passed, he immediately nodded his agreement: "Good, it's a deal!"

With that said, Beichen Ying smugly grinned at Su Luo and said: “Sister-in-law, did you hear that? Next year’s catch of Amethyst Thorned fish will be split between the two of us! He he!”

Su Luo then realized that actually, whomever put in the effort to cross the territory of waterspouts, the catch of Amethyst Thorned fish for that year would belong to them.

Nangong Liuyun’s eyes gleamed with demonic light: “You should simply focus on catching your fish. Whatever Amethyst Thorned fish you catch, will all naturally belong to you, they won’t be that shameless to snatch from you.”

“How can you say it like that, making us seem like pirates.” Lan Xuan indignantly said.

He turned around to heroically say to Su Luo while waving his hand: “Sister-in-law, just like Nangong said, you go ahead and fish for yourself. The Amethyst Thorned fish you catch will naturally all belong to you, we won’t take a single one.”

Anye Ming also righteously joined in and continued: “Lan Xuan’s words are my words. We definitely do not want any of Sister-in-law’s Amethyst Thorned fishes.”

Besides, what Amethyst Thorned fish could a mere little third rank martial artist catch? Not being caught back by the Amethyst Thorned fish instead could already be considered pretty good.

Anye Ming and Lan Xuan simply did not believe that Su Luo had the ability to catch any Amethyst Thorned fish. Therefore, the two of them vowed their refusal in unison.

The pitiful duo did not know that very soon, because of their decision, they would pay a very bitter price and regret it till their intestines turned green.

Didn’t know how long they had traveled, when a tiny island appeared ahead.

This was the legendary Amethyst Thorned Island? Except, the island was barren, so flat that one could gallop right across, and there was absolutely nothing on it. Sparsely surrounding the island were some parked yachts.

Seeing the luxury yacht flying Prince Jin Royal's banner, those who had already arrived on the Amethyst Thorned Island all looked over. They respectfully assembled, awaiting his Highness Prince Jin's arrival to grace them with his presence.

Nangong Liuyun disembarked holding Su Luo's hand, leisurely descending by stepping on the wooden gangplank.

With black as a base color and gold trims on the hems, his brocade robe was folded in layers like a cloudy fog. It had barely appeared, and it already immediately brought about a complete, dignified aura.

Su Luo originally wanted to shake off his hand. But, his arm was so strong and powerful that regardless of how she shook, she couldn't shake him off.

Didn't know why this time, Nangong Liuyun seemed to be especially stubborn. No matter how gently she cajoled him, his hand firmly held hers and wouldn't loosen even for a moment.

## Chapter 349 – Fright on Board (8)

---

Having no other alternative, Su Luo could only bite the bullet and follow by his side, enduring the crowd's stares.

Subsequently, Beichen Ying, Anye Ming and Lan Xuan, every single one of them appeared, self-confident, unafraid and without regard for others.

Each and every one of their entrance gave the crowd an intense and awe-inspiring visual impression.

Each of them were arrogant sons of heaven, with large clans supporting behind each of them. Their statuses were exceedingly high and precious, such that should they have a mishap, very likely, the entire continent would be thrown in turmoil.

The instant he saw Su Luo, the face of a person among the crowd immediately blackened.

The Crown Prince's pair of eyes were malicious. His complexion became gloomy enough that water could drip out from it.

Earlier, there were already rumors of Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo having an affair, initially, he did not believe it. Because Nangong Liuyun was what kind of exalted person, how could he fancy a good-for-nothing like Su Luo?

Only, he could never have imagined, that a girl he did not want to marry and personally broke off the engagement with, would in the blink of an eye, hook up with Nangong Liuyun. This was simply a slap to his face!

The Crown Prince coldly glared at Su Luo, seeing her walk past by his side, he couldn't help but to coldly snort: "Loathsome girl, who allowed you to come here? What qualifications do you have to be in this place?"

Su Luo dismissively cast him a glance .

Oh? The Crown Prince? How could she bump into him? Really unlucky.

Without waiting for Su Luo to reply, Beichen Ying who was on the side, had already jumped out. With matters that could make it difficult for the Crown Prince, he was always the first in line.

One could see Beichen Ying with his hands folded behind his back, strutting over. He cast sidelong glances at the Crown Prince with head high and chest out: “Oh? Here I was wondering who it is. So, it turned out to be Nangong Liujue ah. What, last year, you couldn’t even catch a single fish. Did you come here to disgrace yourself again this year?”

Beichen Ying, this child’s words, were just that adorably honest. A single sentence had already made the Crown Prince choke until his face was as black as the bottom of a pot.

The Crown Prince viciously glared at him then coldly snorted a few times: “This prince is speaking with Su Luo, what are you mouthing off for!”

Beichen Ying did not mind the Crown Prince’s attitude one bit and started laughing instead: “I say, you’re such an interesting person. The other person obviously can’t be bothered with you, why are you jolting your butt so eagerly(1) to move closer? You’re even the Crown Prince, how shameless.”

The Crown Prince’s face grew livid!

Did this little brat know how to speak properly?! Why did every sentence seem to be dipped in venom, simply could poison people to death.

The Crown Prince angrily huffed and glared once more at Beichen Ying before turning his head to holler at Su Luo: “You, come over here for this prince!”

Su Luo somewhat speechlessly rolled her eyes at this Crown Prince(2).

Was this person sick? Did she have any relation to him? He really thought himself to be so desirable?

Su Luo appeared not to have heard him. She turned her head towards another direction, admiring the scenery in the distance with great interest.

Who knew that this move of hers would offend the Crown Prince completely. One could see him stomping quickly towards Su Luo, his long arm reaching out

to pull her away with a tug. However, before he could even get close to Su Luo, suddenly, the tip of a sword flew towards his arms.

The Crown Prince jumped back in fright.

If he had insisted on going to pull Su Luo, then this arm would certainly be gone.

The Crown Prince's line of sight pinned on Nangong Liuyun poisonously, before turning to glare at Su Luo: "Get over here for this prince! You as such a fickle woman, still aren't ashamed yet?"

This line of his, simply designated Su Luo as part of his own belongings.

No matter how good Su Luo's temperament was, she was still infuriated by him. Not to mention, Su Luo's temper had never been good to begin with.

One only saw the corners of her lips cocking up icily as she threw a sidelong glance at the Crown Prince. Her voice became increasingly dismissive: "Nangong Liujue, open up your dog eyes wide and see clearly. We have already broken our engagement and no longer have any relationship, not even a little bit. So cease using your status as Crown Prince to disgust me."

*1) It's been used many times in this story before, but it's a lot funnier when you know the words we replaced with 'eagerly' is actually an intensifier that means 'jolting buttocks', like the shaking ass of a follower hurrying to keep up and please someone. So much humor is lost even when jolting buttocks is added. (sigh)*

*2) [Translator response by Neverim](#)*

# Chapter 350 – Amethyst Thorned Island (1)

---

Nangong Liujue simply could not have imagined, originally that meek-like-a-kitten Su Luo, who had strived very hard again and again only to obtain one glance from him, would now use this kind of mocking tone and taunting manner to speak with him.

Nangong Liujue furiously hollered: “Loathsome girl, granted, even if you are not this prince’s legal imperial concubine, you also have to become my concubine on the side. You think you can escape from this? Why haven’t you quickly crawled back to this king!”

Saying this, Nangong Liujue was about to go pull Su Luo again.

Originally, he really didn’t have any interest in Su Luo, but after hearing that this loathsome girl had unexpectedly and quietly cultivated to the third rank, she was so gifted that it simply shocked people. Even more, she was someone Nangong Liuyun fancied.

From childhood to adulthood, he and Nangong Liuyun had always been irreconcilable.

Things that Nangong Liuyun wanted, he must grab it back. Even if he couldn’t snatch it back, he must also destroy it.

Nangong Liuyun’s sword-like eyebrows knitted slightly, he faintly swept Nangong Liujue a glance.

This glance appeared to be light as a cloud or gentle as a breeze, but was overcast with a bloody ruthlessness that threatened to vent its anger violently. This gave Nangong Liujue a severe cold feeling, the temperature was like being in an icehouse.

Beichen Ying smiled faintly and raised an eyebrow. “Oh, Nangong Liujue, how

did our home's sister-in-law become your concubine on the side? You still have the nerve to say this out loud. Also, why haven't you looked in the mirror to see what kind of revolting person you are."

Beichen Ying had always been merciless towards the Crown Prince, never giving him face.

Nangong Liujue's complexion was ashen, he had choked back a breath and was just about to curse out loud, when Lan Xuan stole his thunder to get there first.

Lan Xuan put on a grown-up manner, hardening his face to lecture Nangong Liujue: "You, as a person, are really something. The crown prince should have the poise and character of a crown prince. Look at our home's Anye, proper and impressive in appearance, elegantly poised. This is the demeanor of a proper crown prince. When you have time, learn to emulate him a little more."

Nangong Liujue, a high and mighty crown prince, as a respected elder, was reprimanded like a little brother would be. He was infuriated to the point of snarling in rage at them.

This time, he was cut off by a glance from Anye Ming: "Want to continue being the crown prince smoothly and steadily, then manage well your small piece of land. Extending your hand that far, aren't you afraid of having it chopped off?"

These three people, each and every one of their background was not small. When speaking, each of them was fiercer and more poisonous than the other. They simply overwhelmed the Crown Prince, who was too weary to cope.

With great difficulty, he waited until the three of them finished lecturing him in a row, then the Crown Prince finally had a chance to glare at Su Luo in rage: "I'm giving you one last chance, are you going to follow this prince to walk away or not?"

Those three people, he could not afford to offend, but Su Luo was merely a tiny ant that he could pinch into a sphere or roll flat between his fingers.

Unexpectedly, this tiny ant was already not that ant from the olden days. Now, her complexion was indifferent, the words she said were even more poisonous than the three of them added together: "Nangong Liujue, you think you are the crown prince. In my eyes, you are no better than a beggar, want this lady to

follow you? Your wishful thinking. In your dreams!”

“Su Luo!” The Crown Prince was ridiculed again, and was simply put in an awkward situation, unable to get out.

Originally, he still believed that Su Luo would at least give him some face. He still thought that Su Luo at least cared about him from her old affections. Back then, as long as he gave her one glance, she would almost start to fly...didn't expect, never expected!

The Crown Prince's expression hazed over and changed the topic of conversation with a mocking tone: “Oh, this is because you bumped into a backer, full of confidence, right? You better not think he will marry you, you are merely someone he is toying with and nothing more. After this event, will you still be crying and calling, coming over to beg for this king?”

Nangong Liuyun, who had been standing by the side since the beginning and hadn't talked, displayed a concentrated icy intent with his body. He was cold as frost, his dark red lips slowly hooking up. An ice-cold disdainfulness flashed through his eyes as he cast frosty side glances at the Crown Prince: “You have an objection?”

## Chapter 351 – Amethyst Thorned Island (2)

---

Even though it was only four short words, it was like the calm before the storm. The oppressive atmosphere stifled the words in the crown prince's heart.

“If you don't want to continue being the crown prince, then just say so, don't beat around the bush like this.” Nangong Liuyun's cold gaze looked sharply at the crown prince, his handsome face was saturated with a dense, murderous aura. His eyes were like frost, with his entire person appearing blood-thirsty, ruthless, cruel and stormy.

Nangong Liujue was immediately choked off, looking like someone had very firmly squeezed his neck. No matter what, he couldn't speak.

Beichen Ying covered his lips, smiling happily as he said to the two people beside him: “Actually, Nangong's words are incorrect. Guys, think about it, an incapable person as a crown prince is a good crown prince. Having such a crown prince in position, the person sitting as the emperor how comfortable and happy he ought to be. You guys say, isn't it right?”

Lan Xuan, who was always in cahoots with Beichen Ying, pretended to be surprised and opened his eyes wide: “Oh heavens, an incapable person sitting on the position? Who are you referring to? Is it this person in front of us?”

Lan Xuan had a surprised tone with exaggerated movements. His voice was loud but just right, people within several tens of meters of his body could all hear him.

In an instant, the crown prince's complexion became very red, so red that you could even squeeze water droplets out. The expression he used to glare at Lan Xuan was practically itching to ruthlessly devour him.

However, Beichen Ying hadn't planned to let him go just yet, and continued with Lan Xuan to play off of each other: “Of course, otherwise, who else is there?”

This talk has already been widely spread throughout the entire Eastern Ling's capital. You are actually this ill-informed and ignorant.”

“I order all of you to shut up!” The crown prince's complexion was as black as the bottom of a pot. He coldly and gloomily glared at Su Luo, itching to strike her dead on the spot.

It was all this loathsome girl!

At that time, when he went to Su Manor to break off the engagement, this loathsome girl had misheard his words and yelled it out loud in astonishment.

Thus, this matter about him was spread far and wide. Now, the crown prince was very suspicious. That day, what the loathsome girl had yelled out, was it because she really misheard, or did she do it on purpose?

“Consider you guys got this one, I will remember this treatment! By all means, don't end up in my hand, otherwise...” The crown prince coldly glared at Nangong Liuyun and gave a few heavy humphs. He took along a group of subordinates and left grandiosely. The back of that person, no matter how you looked, seemed to cut a very sorry figure.

Beichen Ying smiled happily and said to Su Luo: “Sister-in-law, don't mind him, this crown prince is just like that. He lacks being scolded and cursed at, after being abused verbally a few times by others, he will be more straightforward. Otherwise, he won't be able to sleep at night.”

Seeing Beichen Ying having an expression of being very knowledgeable about the crown prince, Su Luo felt it was extremely funny, “You are very blunt and rude to him.”

“Naturally, every time we meet, he cannot do without me cursing him a few sentences. However, every time, he still laps it up and moves his face closer. You tell me if this person is worthless or not?” Beichen Ying smiled very self-satisfiedly and proudly. His smile was radiating with delight while he danced and gestured with joy.

Nangong Liuyun glanced at Su Luo with a considering look, seeing her expression was calm, his red, translucent and moist lips smiled. His smile reached his eyes, making them seem intoxicatingly full of soft, yielding waves. He led her

along by the hand: “Let’s go hook some fish.”

“Okay.” Su Luo also felt that her mood shouldn’t be ruined by a mad dog that suddenly jumped out of nowhere. She flung her head and very quickly threw the crown prince out of her head.

This group of people divided up the areas of Amethyst Thorned Island. The best area on the island was divided into two.

In the order of first come first served, the best places on the east side were occupied by the subordinates and powers that were affiliated with the crown prince.

The so-called best spot was where people hooked the most Amethyst Thorned fishes from the previous years.

However. Nangong Liuyun wasn’t superstitious about this, he led Su Luo and walked towards the crag on the west side. According to their strength right now, if they wanted to snatch the position, naturally the crown prince’s forces wouldn’t be able to beat them. Only, Nangong Liuyun was too lazy to bother to deal with the crown prince.

## Chapter 352 – Amethyst Thorned Island (3)

---

The two of them sat on the rock rampart on the crag, with both legs dangling in mid-air. The breeze brushed by, swaying the ink-black strands of hair, giving off a hint of an especially indolent and idle appearance.

Nangong Liuyun took out a series of equipment and helped Su Luo set up her fishing rod properly. Hand in hand, he taught her how to fish for the Amethyst Thorned fish.

After Su Luo learned from his demonstrations, he sat in a place very close to Su Luo and started angling.

Su Luo, full of interest, gazed fixedly at the fishing rod.

This fishing rod's design was very peculiar. The dark-coloured fishing rod was suffused with a faint gloss, emitting a spirit aura. Compared to the fishing rod from her previous life, it was simply as different as night and day.

When fishing, it was not as simple as just carrying the fishing rod in hand. Rather, you must pour your spirit power into the fishing rod and carefully sense the situation on the seafloor, then little by little, lure the Amethyst Thorned fish to take the bait.

In the beginning, Su Luo was still full of interest, and with single-minded devotion, poured her spirit power into the fishing rod to sense the world at the bottom of the ocean. After more than an hour had passed she didn't even see a shadow of an Amethyst Thorned fish, and lost some of the mood.

She placed both hands under her chin, bored to death. She started to glance around at her surroundings in her boredom.

No wonder Anye Ming and Lan Xuan made a vow of not wanting any Amethyst Thorned fish she hooked. As it turned out, they already knew earlier that she

would not be able to hook an Amethyst Thorned fish.

However, in more than an hour, Nangong Liuyun already caught five fishes, Anye Ming caught three, behind the two, Lan Xuan and Beichen Ying both caught two. Only her, not to mention a fish, she couldn't even get her hands on a fish scale, truly embarrassing.

"Alas." Su Luo was bored senseless and started to complain to the little divine dragon through their mind link, "Too embarrassing, too embarrassing, too embarrassing..."

The little divine dragon went 'awoo,awoo' while thinking it over. All of a sudden, he extended his little paw and pointed at that deep pool of clear spirit spring. That was to say, the legendary Celestial Spirit Water.

"You are saying that by using the Celestial Spirit Water, I will be able to hook an Amethyst Thorned fish?" Su Luo asked, somewhat unconvinced.

The little divine dragon opened its pair of huge eyes wide, cleverly nodded and stammeringly said: "Fish...fish...food...food..."

The little divine dragon, who was trying to learn human dialect, was afraid that he wasn't clear, so finally, he flopped about on his belly acting out the motions of a fish being hooked.

That comical and adorable little action simply made Su Luo so pleased and entertained, that she uttered a light laugh.

"What happened? Not being able to hook a fish and still in such a cheerful mood?" Before, Nangong Liuyun was still worried that this girl would be upset from not hooking a single Amethyst Thorned fish. But, he didn't expect that her attitude was still this good, quite able to amuse herself and be cheerful.

"Not able to catch a fish? Humph, humph, all of you just wait to be shocked." Su Luo raised an eyebrow, smugly giving a him a snort.

With the help of the little divine dragon, she didn't believe she wouldn't be able to catch an Amethyst fish. If she still couldn't hook a fish, she might as well drop the little divine dragon into the ocean as fish bait.

Su Luo took advantage that people weren't watching and noiselessly took out

a few drops of Celestial Spirit Water, then, she secretly mixed it into the fish food.

The fish food was originally a dark green color, that was then kneaded into little balls of dough. When you baited the hook, you took a little bit of it, and when Su Luo put in a little bit of Celestial Spirit Water, it only made the fish food bait a little more moist. People at the side couldn't tell that there was any difference from before.

This fish food was said to have been mixed personally by Nangong Liuyun, the sources alone consumed a huge sum. If you didn't have few ten thousand gold coins, you absolutely could not make this fish food bait.

Su Luo added the Celestial Spirit Water into the fish food, and stirred it well again, before pinching it into little round balls to put on the fish hook. Her face carried hope, expectation and anticipation.

Could or couldn't hook an Amethyst Thorned fish, will all depend on this trick.

Nangong Liuyun saw her hook and laughed involuntarily: "Where is there someone who fishes like you? The fish food bait is bigger than the mouth of an Amethyst Thorned fish. How can you catch a fish this way?"

However, before the smiling expression at the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth could go down, the fishhook that Su Luo just cast moved slightly.

## Chapter 353 – Amethyst Thorned Island (4)

---

This meant that the fish took the bait.

Su Luo's heart was pleasantly surprised again, she energetically lifted up the fishing rod and lifted her eyes to look. She saw that on her fish hook, was actually an awe-inspiring, dazzling, purple Amethyst Thorned fish!

It was about the size of a palm and the Amethyst Thorned fish looked similar to the Crucian carp.

Under the illumination of the sunlight, this Amethyst Thorned fish that was suspended above the water not only didn't swing about struggling to escape, on the contrary, it continued to nibble on the little round ball of fish food bait with great gusto.

Su Luo used her strength and flung the rod, in a flash, she flung the Amethyst Thorned fish ashore. Afterwards, with her mood uplifted, she grabbed the little thing that was still refusing to let go of the fish food.

Humans will die for riches, just as birds will for food, the little fish was the same.

The Amethyst Thorned fish only now seemed to have recovered its senses, turning its body to look stupidly at the sea surface not far away. It then looked at the person that caught it, and immediately, it started to struggle non-stop.

Su Luo, smiling happily, poked its little head: "Oh, now you know to struggle? Too late."

While speaking, she tossed this little Amethyst Thorned fish with teary and misty eyes, into the wooden barrel.

Didn't know if Beichen Ying did it on purpose with his distribution of barrels, but he gave Nangong Liuyun a huge wooden barrel, while the one arranged for

her was one a child would use for playing house, that kind of small bucket. Even if you fill it up, the bucket was one that wouldn't be able to fit more than a few fishes.

This was the first time that Su Luo hooked a fish, naturally, she was a little excited. She gazed at that Amethyst Thorned fish with an expression of simply loving it too much to part with it.

Just when Su Luo was all smiles with elation and immensely proud of herself, and wanted to go tell Nangong Liuyun the secret; not far away, Nangong Liujue, escorted by a group of people, grandiosely walked over.

The crown prince had his hand linked behind his back and coldly cast a sidelong glance at Su Luo. The corner of his mouth hooked up as he sneeringly said: "Oh, you really did actually catch an Amethyst Thorned fish. Amazing, I thought you wouldn't be able to catch a single one before this day comes to a close!"

Su Luo somewhat speechlessly swept this crown prince a glance. She really couldn't understand, she had already said everything very clearly, why did he still come over to look and to be cursed at?

Su Luo didn't feel like paying him any attention, she took out a small ball of fish bait and once again baited the fishhook.

Nangong Liujue saw that Su Luo had actually ignored him, his heart became even more angry and he gave a heavy, cold snort: "Loathsome girl, It's now reached to this extent and you are still pretending to be noble and virtuous. When the time comes, see how you will die!"

"Oh?" Su Luo unhurriedly cast him a glance and her head lowered as she continued to fiddle with the fish bait. The fish bait was a little too moist, so once she put it in place, it would drop off. Looks like she needed to wait until it dried a little in the sun.

"You still don't know right? That second older sister of yours, after returning to her teacher's school, Grandmaster Lan Hai had sent her all kinds of spirit elixir and pills like flowing water, non-stop. Before one month is over, she may advance to the fifth rank. At that time, you, a mere little third rank, will still hope to defeat her? Life and death duel, life and death duel, it's to either live or die, you still think you can survive?" The crown prince smiled complacently.

The two Misses from the Su family drawing up this life and death duel, it was spread abuzz throughout the entire imperial capital. Now, there practically wasn't anyone who didn't know about it.

Even though Su Luo stunned a lot of people by going from a good-for-nothing waste to a third rank, yet nearly everyone was unanimously optimistic about Su Qing.

Su Luo gave an 'oh' sound in a light as a cloud and soft as the wind manner. Just like this, she had no other words for him.

However, her heart was secretly on guard, she originally thought about it, Su Qing's cultivation could increase within a month. But, she hadn't anticipated that Su Qing's teacher's sect would value her this much, the match after a month....Could she really win against her?

Nangong Liujue saw Su Luo's lowered eyes in contemplation, immediately, he was extremely happy. He raised an eyebrow and mockingly sneered at her: "Loathsome girl, now you are afraid, right?"

Su Luo raised her eyes, her gaze indifferently landed on his body and she frowned slightly: "The crown prince took the time to come over in his busy schedule, was it just to inform me of this matter?"

## Chapter 354 – Amethyst Thorned Island (5)

---

The implication being whether he was so idle that he came to look like a pain in the ass?

The crown prince was immediately blocked by her, and he was choking on a sentence stuck in his throat.

He just received the news a moment ago, so naturally, he would come over to taunt Su Luo.

Originally, he thought she would be so scared by this news that all the color would bleach out of her face. In this way, he would have avenged his hatred from a moment ago okay? But, who could have imagined that this loathsome girl's mental strength was pretty good. The expression on her face didn't reveal her mood nor did she seem to be distracted by the news.

His gaze landed on that little wooden bucket near Su Luo, and suddenly, he was happy again.

“Fishing up to now and only hooking one Amethyst Thorned fish? You tell me, don't you think this is embarrassing?” Nangong Liujue's face was full of disdain: “Surveying this entire island, when it comes to hooking the least number and at the bottom, this position is yours exclusively. Really embarrassing.”

Seeing this crown prince in front of her always being arrogant and bossy to her, a lightbulb turned on in Su Luo's head, and a split second later, an idea appeared.

Wasn't Nangong Liujue disdainful of how few Amethyst Thorned fishes she had caught? Then...Could she use this pretext to extort some stuff from him, making this crown prince die from heartache of the loss?

Finished thinking, Su Luo gave Nangong Liuyun a light tug, stopping his slowly-

about-to-stand-up figure.

This was because under the circumstances of the crown prince continuing to provoke Su Luo, Nangong Liuyun's complexion had gradually darkened, he had the intent to move at any moment to dispose of him. Su Luo, with great difficulty, had caught this fat cow of a crown prince, how could she let this crown prince off so easily.

Su Luo's smile was not quite a smile as she cast a sidelong glance at the crown prince. She lifted an eyebrow and said sarcastically: "You actually look down on the number of Amethyst Thorned fish I caught? Then, do you have the courage to engage in a contest with me? Let's see within a fixed time, which one of us will catch the most number of Amethyst Thorned fishes!"

How could the crown prince know that Su Luo had already found the trick to hooking the Amethyst Thorned fish? In his eyes, it had taken this long for Su Luo to catch only one Amethyst Thorned fish, and that's all. Also, it was so small there couldn't be another that was smaller.

Therefore, Su Luo's words hit directly on the crown prince's intent, and he could be seen smiling coldly: "Loathsome girl, such big courage, you actually dare to compete with this prince."

"What, the always-boasting-that-he-is-incomparably-gallant crown prince, this time, became a coward?" Su Luo directly used taunting methods to spur him into action.

The corner of the crown prince's mouth evoked into a ridiculing sneer: "Loathsome girl, you ought to know that this prince has already hooked three Amethyst Thorned fishes up until now. You only caught one fish, you sure you want to compete with this prince?"

"Humph, I can be killed any time, but won't tolerate any insults! Could it be that you think I would be afraid of you?" Both of Su Luo's cheeks were round from fuming, giving off an appearance of being hot-blooded, easily cheated and letting one's emotions make the decisions.

Just now, Nangong Liujue was criticized by Beichen Ying and them too wretchedly. He thought that this would be a great opportunity to turn the tables on them. Su Luo's, these words, were right on the money with his intent, but on

his face, he faked an expression of having been put into a difficult situation: “Humph, competing with you, wouldn’t this prince have an unfair advantage?”

Su Luo secretly looked down on him in her thoughts.

She was the most adept at figuring out a person’s heart.

She could clearly see, that the crown prince was obviously secretly, extremely happy to do this, but still put on this kind of act to use all sort of excuses, who were you trying to fool?

Su Luo didn’t bother to match his performance and simply turned her body away, unwilling to acknowledge him: “Since it is like this, then it’s fine not to compete. Your Highness the crown prince, please return.”

The crown prince wanted to use declining as a way to advance, Su Luo used the same maneuver of withdrawing to advance forward. This forced the crown prince to be flustered and unprepared.

The crown prince didn’t expect that Su Luo would not be drawn to the path he was leading her onto, and an ugly expression flashed through his eyes. But, he was even more enraged and one could see him give a cold snort: “Since you, yourself, insist on courting death, then this prince will help you accomplish this task. Want to compete, then let’s compete!”

Beichen Ying usually was the one who loved spectacles the most, and was also the one who liked to bicker with the crown prince the most. One could see him holding an Amethyst Thorned fish and leisurely walking over.

## Chapter 355 – Amethyst Thorned Island (6)

---

Beichen Ying's fishing rod was swinging in a carefree manner over his shoulder and started to talk with scorching satire and frigid irony: "Oh, who is pretending as if they are about to lose out? Nangong Liujue, if you have the ability, then don't bully women and have a competition with me instead."

When the crown prince saw Beichen Ying, his temple pulsed fiercely, this person was simply his nemesis in this lifetime. Just seeing him meant nothing good would happen!

The crown prince sent a resentful glance at Beichen Ying: "Meddling in other people's business, take a hike to the side."

Beichen Ying was no longer cheerful: "This is my sister-in-law, what do you mean I am meddling in other people's business? Nangong Liujue, the person that needs to take a hike to the side ought to be you."

Both of their remarks were not agreeable, thus they started to quarrel noisily.

Su Luo was simply dumbfounded watching this scene.

One was the respectable and honorable crown prince of an empire, the other was the enigmatic president of the Mercenary Union. These two masters, normally, in front of other people, appeared to be arrogant, condescending, aloof, and very high and mighty. To those people beneath them, both of their existences were eminent and unapproachable.

Yet, who could have anticipated that now, these two extremely honorable personages, would quarrel noisily like immature kids. 'You say one, I say two', and were going at it quite energetically.

Su Luo had just planned to ruthlessly swindle the crown prince in return, how could she look on helplessly and let the crown prince escape by turning around

and leaving abruptly again? Consequently, she could only come to smooth things over.

“Okay, okay, both of you stop quarreling. Beichen, first, you take a moment to rest. Crown prince, are we still having this competition? If we are not competing, then go away, don’t disturb my mood to fish. Because of you two’s sound volume from noisy snarling and roaring, no matter how good the fish bait, it would not be able to hook an Amethyst Thorned fish.

Su Luo craftily winked at Beichen Ying, Beichen Ying had already experienced Su Luo’s wit and intelligence. He nodded his head in complete understanding of her meaning, and cleverly crossed his arms to stand at the side.

The crown prince saw that Beichen Ying stopped quarreling, naturally, he also knew when to stop. He gave a severe snort: “Want to compete, then let’s compete. But...only this prince and you, the both of us will compete, others are not allowed to interfere!”

Saying this, his gaze swept from Beichen Ying’s to Nangong Liuyun’s body. He loathed both these people, but couldn’t help admitting that their strength was extraordinary. It was also because of their extraordinary strength that he loathed them even more!

Su Luo faintly smiled: “Then, what are the rewards and penalties for this competition?”

The crown prince thought about it, suddenly, his mouth hooked into a sneer: “How about this. Just use the amount of Amethyst Thorned fish hooked to decide things. Whoever has more will win, as for the rewards and penalties, then the winning side will get the rewards. If the winning side hooks ten Amethyst Thorned fish, then the losing side will compensate the winner with ten pieces of green-colored crystal stones, and so on.”

Ten Amethyst Thorned fish, will be compensated with ten green-colored crystal stones? Su Luo’s heart was simply too excited. This idiotic crown prince simply did not know that she had a cheating tool placed in the fish bait, and actually stupidly set down this rule. This time, wouldn’t he be scared to death of the compensation?

Only, Su Luo was afraid of revealing a clue, in a split second, her expression

seemed somewhat hesitant.

Nangong Liuyun smiled in an easy-going manner and rubbed Su Luo's head: "Mere green-colored crystal stones, this king can still afford to lose, go play without holding back."

Implication being, if she lost, the penalty would be considered his to pay?

Su Luo smilingly nodded her head towards him and again coldly humphed towards the crown prince: "Fine! It's decided just like this, but words are not good enough proof, we must draw up a written contract."

The crown prince was still afraid that Su Luo would renege on the debt, so both people agreed easily. He ordered a servant to fetch brush, ink and paper, then the paper was laid out on top of a large stone.

Beichen Ying, full of interest, acted as a witness, he then picked up the brush and started to write. At this moment, the writing done by the brush was like moving clouds and flowing water on top of the paper. The handwriting on the paper flowed smoothly and elegantly, delighting the eyes of the people watching.

## Chapter 356 – Amethyst Thorned Island (7)

---

Beichen Ying stopped the brush and self-satisfiedly lifted his chin: “The written calligraphy is truly great. Simply want to collect it and don’t let anyone see it.”

Su Luo was speechless, this child, as expected, was influenced by a different environment. He was the same as Nangong Liuyun, with no limit to their narcissism.

Altogether, Beichen Ying wrote three copies, one was given to Su Luo, another was given to the crown prince. In addition, the final copy was held by him as the witness, so as to avoid someone renegeing and not acknowledging the debt.

After the three people signed their own names, the competition could begin.

“Three hours is the limit, whoever hooks the most Amethyst Thorned fish will be the winner.” With a wave of Beichen Ying’s hand, the competition officially started.

In order to maintain the fairness, equality and the openness of the competition, Su Luo and Nangong Liujue sat in the same place to fish.

Everyone’s fish bait was their own secret recipe mix. No one would inspect the other’s fish bait. As long as it could hook an Amethyst Thorned fish, then it’s enough. Therefore, Su Luo fished with a clear conscience.

Now, not far away, Lan Xuan was smiling and shaking his head.

“Oh dear, looks like this time, Nangong will bleed a huge amount.” Lan Xuan leisurely leaned back into his chair and switched to a more comfortable position, and his voice held a sigh: “That girl is also really too headstrong. Don’t know how Nangong fell just for her?”

Anye Ming glared at him: “If you don’t want to wound the camaraderie among brothers, then don’t speculate about her. Could it be that you couldn’t tell that

this time, Nangong is really serious?”

Lan Xuan's expression was lethargic, he cast a glance at the spectacle in the distance and still crooned out a sentence: "But I really can't see what characteristic that Miss has that is fit to be with Nangong. You look at this matter she created..."

Anye Ming paused a little, looking towards the azure sky in the distance. He looked at it for a long time before pensively saying one sentence: "You think this time she will lose?"

"Isn't it obvious?" Lan Xuan spread out both hands, and as expected, said: "Nangong Liujue, although he looks annoying, he does not lack strength. Don't forget that last year, the number of Amethyst Thorned fish he hooked was second only to Nangong. How could the Su family's girl compete with him? It is simply attempting the impossible and asking for trouble, okay? Also, Nangong is really too much, to actually still indulge her whim."

Anye Ming smiled faintly, his tone was mild: "No, this time, I'm afraid you may have guessed wrong."

"You believe that girl can win?" Lan Xuan cast a laughable glance at Anye Ming.

"I don't believe in her, but I do believe in Nangong." Anye Ming said vaguely: "Nangong's vision is usually the most accurate from childhood to adulthood, have you ever seen him lose?"

"That is true...but this time, maybe he outsmarted himself and fell into a hidden ditch, right?" No matter what, Lan Xuan did not believe that Su Luo could win.

Anye Ming only smiled indifferently and didn't say anything more, he merely focused on the fishing rod.

What he didn't tell Lan Xuan, was that he always felt that that girl was not that simple. Moreover, she was very mysterious, and the specifics were hard to say.

However, speaking of Su Luo's side.

The matter of the bet got around, and as a result, a lot of people approached

and settled around them to see the result.

However, compared to Su Luo, everyone was optimistic about the crown prince winning.

Not only was the crown prince's martial arts cultivation rank much higher than Su Luo's, the number of Amethyst Thorned fish that he had caught last year ought to speak for itself. His strength was out of the ordinary.

"This Miss still doesn't know the immensity of heaven and earth, to actually dare to hammer on the table of the crown prince."

"This isn't considered much, the most interesting thing is their stake. How many Amethyst Thorned fish the winning side hooks, the losing side must compensate that many green-colored crystal stones. Hey, hey, I'm afraid this Miss will bleed a huge amount."

"Which family is this Miss from? Why is it that I have never seen her before?"

"Have you heard of Su Manor's good-for-nothing waste? Have you heard about the buzzing rumors that were recently spread of a life and death duel between sisters?"

## Chapter 357 – Amethyst Thorned Island (8)

---

“Oh! It turns out that she is actually that renowned fourth Miss Su. No wonder, I heard she stole her older sister’s fiance, infuriating her sister so much that she set up a life and death duel on the spot?”

“This also happened? Really can’t see it from her clean and neat, pretty little appearance that she actually could do something this immoral. She would even steal her own older biological sister’s fiance?”

For some time, many people talked and whispered about topics ranging from the Amethyst Thorned Island to life and death battles.

Su Luo’s hearing had always been good, after being promoted to the third rank, it became even sharper, thus, every word that was said reached her ears.

She actually didn’t expect that within a short month’s time, the public opinion would all become in favor of Su Qing. It made her reputation spotless and white as a lotus flower, also turning her into the victim, while she became the ruthless and vicious woman.

Su Luo thought about it and couldn’t help but feel that it was too funny.

These rumors, if there wasn’t someone secretly guiding, it she definitely would not believe it! As for who that person was... He, he, Su Luo only smiled and did not speak.

Su Luo grabbed a small ball of fish bait, placed it on the fish hook, and cast her fishing line into the sea.

After all, this was her first time fishing, thus, even with her intelligence, her movements had a few problems.

Therefore, this became another area the people could criticize her on, finding fault with even the tiniest details.

“Tut! Can’t even cast a fishing rod, how can she catch an Amethyst Thorned fish ah? Does she think that the Amethyst Thorned fish are the same as other kinds of fish?”

“That’s right, that ball of fish bait is way too big, how can she use so much? If the Amethyst Thorned fish really bites it, then that would be strange.”

“Just with this level of ability, and she still wants to compete with the crown prince? This is so embarrassing as to lose face all the way to her maternal grandmother’s family. No need to predict the outcome of the competition. I can tell you now, His Highness the Crown Prince will definitely win.”

These bystanders watching the spectacle all forecasted and vowed that Su Luo would lose.

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth rose slightly, her attention focused on the surface of the sea. She completely ignored the nearby numerous disturbances.

The crown prince had heard all the negative comments towards Su Luo. He calmly cast a glance at Su Luo and mockingly said, “If you manage to hook even a single Amethyst Thorned fish, this prince will...”

Before he could finish, suddenly, the mocking smile on the crown prince’s face stiffened.

Because, he saw that the fishing line on Su Luo’s fishing rod was being dragged downwards.

This was the sign that a fish had bitten the hook.

Everybody nearby became excited.

“OMG, it took the bait, it took the bait!”

How is that possible? Wasn’t this line only cast merely half a minute ago?

“How was it half a minute? It hasn’t been less than ten seconds, right? That being said, this luck is a little too good, right?”

Faced with these incoherent, excited voices, Su Luo merely smiled faintly. She carefully reeled in, then lifted the fishing rod for a closer look. On the fishing line was hooked a lively, jumping Amethyst Thorned fish.

This Amethyst Thorned fish was much bigger compared to the one before. It was about two adult palms long, and there was a faint purple spirit power being emitted from its whole body. With just one look, you could tell that its age was not young.

Not waiting for Su Luo to put it down, Beichen Ying had already run up like a lackey, diligently helping Su Luo take the Amethyst Thorned fish's mouth off the hook, and happily giving Su Luo a thumbs up, "Older brother's wife is so amazing, continue on with this persistence, and eliminate that f\*cker!"

"Who are you calling a f\*cker!" The crown prince was just feeling depressed, and again hearing Beichen Ying chattering happily not far away annoyed him to death. He gave a heavy snort and sent a cold glare at Beichen Ying.

"Whoever answered, that's who it refers to." The clever Beichen Ying quickly avoided the trap in the Crown Prince's words.

If Beichen Ying had answered that the f\*cker mentioned was you, then that was just covertly admitting that Beichen Ying, he himself, was the f\*cker.

## Chapter 358 – Amethyst Thorned Island (9)

---

The crown prince set up this trap and believed from the bottom of his heart that Beichen Ying would be taken in. This way, he could seize the opportunity to ridicule him instead of always being ridiculed by him. Unfortunately, Beichen Ying wasn't fooled.

The crown prince was infuriated to the point that the temple on his forehead started to pulse. He angrily and loudly shouted: "Get lost!"

Beichen Ying merely held the Amethyst Thorned fish and strutted around in front of the crown prince: "What's the point of bickering? If you have the ability, let's use strength to talk. You should also hook a fish for me to take a look."

Su Luo saw that these two were about to fight again, and somewhat helplessly placed her hand on her forehead and shook her head. She pinched off a small ball of fish bait and put it on top of the fish hook. Once again, she cast the fishing rod into the sea.

On the other side, Beichen Ying and the crown prince still hadn't finished arguing. The sounds of surprise once again arose from this side. .

"Oh heavens!!! It moved again, the fishing rod moved again!"

"This is impossible! How can it be like this? Isn't the Amethyst Thorned fish very difficult to catch?"

"Don't tell me that this year's Amethyst Thorned fishes are especially dumb? Especially easy to angle for?"

"You are especially dumb! Just now, it's not like you didn't fish for it, why did you become stupid? Obviously, the fishes are slipping away like a thief, so slippery that they won't stay in your hand."

"But...but that's not right! The fourth Miss Su clearly is hooking them very

easily!”

“Then, did you see the crown prince hook an Amethyst Thorned fish?”

Nangong Liujue immediately stopped quarrelling and looked over at Su Luo. He only saw her effortlessly pull up the fishing rod and that another lively, frisky Amethyst Thorned fish was hooked to her fishing rod.

He was simply gaping in shock, his entire person was flabbergasted.

“This is impossible!” How could there be someone who could catch two Amethyst Thorned fishes within less than a minute?

What did she take an Amethyst Thorned fish as? An ordinary kind of fish? That was a full-of-spirit-power and intelligent Amethyst Thorned fish! Take him as an example, if he was able to hook one in twenty minutes, it was already considered extraordinarily great.

But, this loathsome girl’s luck was good to this extent? Two fishes within one minute!!! Two fishes!!!

The crown prince was itching to yell out loud ‘you are cheating’, these three words. However, logic told him, why would it be cheating to catch Amethyst Thorned fishes? No matter what methods you use, being able to hook one was considered good.

Su Luo glanced faintly at the crown prince. In her eyes, appeared a smiling expression that didn’t reach their depths: “Eh? Does the crown prince not have a single fish yet? This is not normal, you must try harder.”

A sentence that was as light as a feather but was like a heavy fist, was ruthlessly thrown at the crown prince’s face, knocking him dizzy.

The crown prince’s malicious gaze swept a glance at Su Luo and coldly said: “Don’t celebrate too early, the outcome of this competition hasn’t been determined. There will be a time for you to cry!”

“Then just wait and see, see who is the person that will cry when the time comes.” After Su Luo had placed the fish bait properly, she very casually tossed the fishing line into the ocean.

Other people who wanted to hook an Amethyst Thorned fish, every step of the

process, they must be cautious, careful and concentrate on the task completely. They still had to throw all the spirit strength in their body onto the fishing line, always paying attention to whether the fish bait was bitten, afraid that if they were not careful, the precious Amethyst Thorned fish would be gone.

However, with Su Luo, whatever so-called professional techniques were non-existent.

She just casually threw the fishing line, and afterwards, she would hold the fishing rod, waiting for the fish to take the bite, then hook it easily, just like that. It simply made those so-called professionals, who were proficient in various techniques, stare with their eyes wide open.

In the beginning, everybody was using a tone of making fun of her to mock her that her way was not right, but Su Luo used reality to ruthlessly strike back at them.

In less than a few seconds, Su Luo's fishing line once again sank a little...

Now, all the people surrounding them were so excited that they had gone practically insane.

“Fish...fish...”

“Again...again it bit...”

“Heaven....Oh heavens....oh...”

# Chapter 359 – Amethyst Thorned Island 10

---

The surrounding spectators were nearly shocked into a daze by Su Luo's show of skill.

How could this be! This was simply impossible alright? Too unimaginable!

In less than two minutes, there was actually someone who could continuously hook three Amethyst Thorn fishes, and each were bigger than the last one?

Yet clearly, they had also tried their hand at fishing before. All of them knew just how very, incredibly difficult it was to catch these Amethyst Thorned fishes that were full of intelligence!

At this moment, the crown prince was staring stupidly in a daze at Su Luo, entirely uncertain on how to react, except for the involuntary twitching of his cheek which betrayed how at a loss he felt.

"This... .. This... .." The crown prince pointed at the water surface in shock, asking Su Luo in a daze: "Just what kind of devilish method did you use?"

Su Luo calmly glanced at him, raised an eyebrow and smiled vaguely: "Devilish method? Crown prince, should demonstrate it for us to see. Slandering people is wrong. Talking nonsense without evidence, others will say that the crown prince cannot afford to lose."

"You are such a loathsome girl!" The crown prince's eyes became bloodshot, wishing he could swallow Su Luo alive and whole. This loathsome girl's words seemed like they were polished with poison. She was simply carved out of the same mold as Beichen Ying.

"'Loathsome girl', is insulting whom?" Nangong Liuyun nonchalantly swept a gaze at him, His pair of eyes were cold and threatening. He bore the dignity of an elite, powerful master from head to toe.

The crown prince immediately felt as if he had fallen into an ice-room, and stiffened all over, stammering speechlessly.

Abominable! The crown prince clenched his fist by his side, hating the fact that despite having the same status as Nangong Liuyun, he had always lost under that profoundly enigmatic gaze of his.

Currently, the not-so-distant Anye Ming and Lan Xuan had noticed the commotion over on this side. They couldn't help being somewhat curious, Lan Xuan was even more so, and directly beckoned a servant over.

“What? Catching three Amethyst Thorned fishes in under two minutes? How can that be possible!” Lan Xuan leapt to his feet. Due to being too excited, even the chair behind him had toppled over onto the ground.

Anye Ming was also shocked to a standstill. Although because of Nangong Liuyun, he had thought of Su Luo more favorably; but he had never expected that the girl's performance would actually go beyond expectations!

This was simply unimaginable to the extreme.

In this group of people, they could also be considered among the top, catching no more than two or three fishes under an hour. But that girl, Su Luo actually accomplished an hour of their efforts in under two minutes?

This was something only a tenth-ranked or above expert could do. right? Even if their fathers' generation were to undertake the task, they might also not be able to catch three Amethyst Thorned fishes within two minutes!

Could it be that hooking an Amethyst Thorned fish was no longer related to a person's cultivation levels? Simply inconceivable.

“Go! Let's go see it for ourselves, I don't believe that girl can really do it!” Lan Xuan was deeply unconvinced, grabbing Anye Ming, and with a turn of his head, left.

Anye Ming merely laughed bitterly as he shook his head.

Under the gaze of the crowd, with so many eyes watching it happen just a short distance away from them, how could it be false?

It was just that Anye Ming was also curious. He couldn't wrap his head around

how that girl Su Luo could have done it.

The crowd bustled about, every one of them was filled with excitement and the pairs of eyes watching Su Luo fixedly, simply held all kinds of complex emotions.

Shock, astonishment, envy, jealousy and hatred... .. Many kinds, but most of them were still envy, jealousy and hate.

Su Luo indifferently swept her gaze around her surroundings.

Just now, these people were still vowing that they predicted that the crown prince would win. She had merely hooked three fishes, and it was enough to make them this excited. Then, if she were to hook a few more, would it not drive them all mad?

## Chapter 360 – Amethyst Thorned Island (11)

---

Su Luo smiled faintly and deftly cast the fishing rod into the sea again.

This time, almost everyone was eyeing Su Luo's fishing rod, the many pairs of eyes stared, as if wishing to bore a hole into the sea's surface.

Under the scrutiny of many extremely excited gazes, both of Su Luo's hands remained as steady as a rock, without a single shred of stage fright from being observed closely by everyone at the scene.

"There's a bite." Su Luo was secretly delighted as she casually pulled, and it was another lively and flopping Amethyst Thorned fish.

The duration for this time, just as before, did not exceed half a minute. It seemed as if the Amethyst Thorned fishes were already waiting beneath the sea, just waiting for Su Luo's fishing hook. The speed of capture simply could not be any faster.

Seeing this scene, Anye Ming's expression flashed with a thread of surprise. Fast, it was simply too fast.

Lan Xuan's reaction was even more obvious. He stared at Su Luo in a daze, both eyes filled with disbelief, and the him right now simply did not know how to react.

Though he still did not believe the words of a bystander, but now he had witnessed with his own eyes Su Luo casting the fishing rod. In merely a blink of an eye, what she pulled up was an Amethyst Thorned fish. It was basically as if countless Amethyst Thorned fishes were trying to outdo each other, waiting to take the bait.

This was simply as if, those Amethyst Thorn fishes were as obedient as domesticated animals reared in her home.

This girl....Was simply too miraculous!

Originally, Lan Xuan still found Su Luo to be questionable, now, he used an admiring and even a worshipful expression to stare at Su Luo. He was itching to lunge over and cling to her thigh, to beg and ask her how she had accomplished it.

Following that Su Luo once more pulled up an Amethyst Thorned fish, everyone present was seething, but they all remained silent. Everyone was gazing with worship at Su Luo, as if she was a goddess. They all held their breath with rapt attention, watching her every move very carefully.

Su Luo felt goosebumps rise on her skin from those stares. She secretly guessed, was her own performance way too outstanding?

Seeing Beichen Ying about to move in, Lan Xuan, who was a step faster, joyfully pounced forward and helped unhook the twisting Amethyst Thorn fish which was struggling to escape. He gave Su Luo a silly smile as he took the chance to get closer to her: "Sister-in-law, tell me, is there some mysterious secret to this fishing rod?"

It was not just Lan Xuan who wanted to ask, currently, everyone at the scene all wanted to question her. Consequently, following this question, everyone's gaze all concentrated onto Su Luo's face. Those pairs and pairs of eyeballs that were bright as snow, converged together, how astonishing the resulting effect was.

"Cough, cough." Su Luo lifted her fist to the side of her lips and coughed lightly, while in passing, she casually handed her fishing rod over to Lan Xuan, "Why don't you try it?"

The secret was in the fish food, but the fish food was handed to her at that time by Lan Xuan. Therefore, Su Luo was very certain that Lan Xuan's attention would definitely not be on the fish food.

Lan Xuan did not expect Su Luo to be so straightforward. He skeptically accepted the fishing rod, appraising it all over before again giving Su Luo a suspicious glance.

Su Luo shrugged, "Isn't it you who don't believe my abilities to fish? Who felt

that the secret was in the fishing rod? You take it, try it yourself and you will find out.”

Lan Xuan was really obedient and took out the fish food he carried with him. He carefully added it to the fish hook and stealthily cast Su Luo a glance. He was unable to tell from her facial expressions, and thus thought it was suspicious. Afterwards, with single-minded devotion, he used the fishing rod, casting it towards the sea.

Following Lan Xuan’s action, everyone’s gaze fell sharply upon that floating, tiny fishing line.

If it was truly capable of hooking the fish, then this fishing rod... Nearly everyone’s gaze looked covertly at the fishing rod, desperately wanting to snatch the fishing rod immediately for their own.

Because, if it was truly proven to be this fishing rod’s doing, then, without a doubt, in an instant, it would become recognised as a godly device and become the target of every competing force in the world.

## Chapter 361 – Amethyst Thorned Island (12)

---

Su Luo leisurely and carefreely sat by Nangong Liuyun's side. She was contentedly nibbling slowly on snacks.

Nangong Liuyun, while laughing, helped her wipe her hand, saying in a gentle voice: "You would even con Lan fourth, you are indeed too bold."

Lan Xuan, ranked number four in his family's direct descent of the younger generation. Normally, among close friends, he was accustomed to being called Lan fourth.

Lan fourth, he had another nickname of 'lazy to death'. This child usually was the laziest, if he could lie down, he absolutely would not sit. If he could sit down, he absolutely would not stand. If it was not for the unending amount of elixirs and medicinal pills, he might not have the level of martial arts cultivation he currently had.

A streak of crafty smile flashed across the corner of Su Luo's mouth: "Naturally, it was he himself who insisted on testing it, what does it have to do with me?"

Besides, before, although Lan fourth was all smiles and had an affectionate manner towards her since the beginning, that pair of eyes had a judging and examining gaze, Su Luo was really fed up with it. Able to retaliate just a little to shock his superior attitude as the child of a super influential aristocratic family, why not go for it?

Nangong Liuyun's large, warm palm was placed on top of Su Luo's head. He indulgently and in a spoiling manner, kneaded her head. He then lifted an eyebrow and smiled: "You ah, not willing to eat even a little loss. However, this king simply loves to death this little temper of yours."

The Nangong Liuyun standing in front of her had a face that was extremely

handsome, as if naturally sculpted from brilliant jade. His facial features were picturesque, eyes like stars with a high and straight nose bridge. His moist lips were red as vermilion, setting off his alluring charm. Just one look could draw you in deeply and you'd never be able to shift your gaze away.

Su Luo shifted her gaze away with great difficulty, turning her head away and disgruntledly said: "Hold your tongue! There are so many people here, talk less nonsense."

"Speaking nonsense?" Nangong Liuyun's thick, jet-black, beautiful eyelashes, swept up slightly, and his phoenix eyes also looked up. They had a kind of mesmerizing-all-living-things quality that was alluring and enticing. A light smile hooked up at the corner of his mouth, his scarlet lips were red as blood: "Good, good, then this king will tell it to you again in front of everyone's face, come ——"

Nangong Liuyun, while saying this, was about to pull Su Luo up, making everyone's gaze look over to where they were.

Su Luo's heart immediately was anxious!

In front of everyone, he was going to reveal his love for her? How outrageous? Currently, she was already the target of many okay?

Su Luo hurriedly threw off his hand and said, full of an imposing manner: "Nangong Liuyun, you shut up now! If you dare say it, then I may just bury you!"

"Bury this king?" Nangong Liuyun raised an eyebrow with interest. His pair of eyes narrowed with dangerous rays of light. His red lips hooked up, as enchanting and gorgeous as fire.

Not good, she incited a disaster! Su Luo's heart was vexed, she shook off Nangong Liuyun's hand and her body had already acted before her brain. At this moment, she had already leapt into the crowd like a burst of wind. In a flash, she disappeared from in front of Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun looked at that quick, nimble, leopard cat-like agility, and his pitch black eyes were as deep as a lake.

If his little Luo'er was just a little more foolish, a little more stupid, a little less gifted, than he wouldn't have such a difficult time chasing after her?

Lan Xuan had already held that bamboo pole for about half an hour. Originally, he was full of expectations, now, his heart was disappointed and had given up all hope.

Because he was able to perceive, when his fish hook was cast down, underwater, there was indeed a school of Amethyst Thorned fish circling around. Yes, that's right, you guys did not hear wrong, there really was a school of Amethyst Thorned fish enveloped in brilliant rays of purple. It formed a dense black mass, 'striving for first, afraid to be last', advancing waves upon waves in this manner.

But, what was strange was that these Amethyst Thorned fishes roamed and looped around the fishhook for a few circles. Afterwards, in twos and threes, they wandered away, in a simply disdainful manner.

Lan Xuan now was so depressed that he was about to spit out blood!

Clearly, it was the same fishing rod, the same fish food, why was it that when switched to him, it would be this kind of treatment?

## Chapter 362 – Amethyst Thorned Island (13)

---

Why was it that when Su Luo angled, they would vie for first and were afraid of being behind, but when it was his turn, they would all disdainfully fling their heads and swim away? This made him so depressed as to nearly spit out blood. He was hurt as deep as the Pacific Ocean.

“Sister-in-law——” Lan Xuan had a ‘wanting to cry but lacking the tears’ expression as he gazed at Su Luo. His tearful, peach blossom eyes were brimming with rays of light, appealing for help.

“What?” Su Luo exasperatedly answered.

How could Lan Xuan tell her, that beneath them, the school of Amethyst Thorned fish that was assembled with great difficulty had all run away from his handling? Could he say he was avoided by a huge school of Amethyst Thorned fish? He felt that this was really embarrassing, and he simply wanted to cover his face.

Lan Xuan’s teary eyes were gleaming with unshed tears as he stuffed the fishing rod into Su Luo’s hands: “Sister-in-law, you come and do it!” Under thousands of staring eyes, if he cast again, he would have lost all his dignity.

Now, the expression he looked at Su Luo with was not judging, but rather looked hopeful and with starstruck eyes, full of adoration and worship.

Su Luo’s attitude towards him changed into one that showed satisfaction, and in passing, she took the offered fishing rod. She smiled faintly and said: “I’ve come, so I’ll do it. Each and every second now is a green-colored crystal stone, can’t afford to waste it.”

Once Su Luo said these words, the crown prince’s complexion immediately blackened!

Wasn't what Su Luo said implying that the more Amethyst Thorned fish she caught, the more tragic his loss would be?

If like before, the crown prince would still haughtily lift his pronounced high arcing chin bone, then give a cold humph and say that wasn't it merely a few pieces of green-colored crystal stones? How could this prince not be able to afford it?

But, with the increased knowledge of Su Luo's speed in hooking an Amethyst Thorned fish in a few seconds, how could the crown prince still have that kind of confidence? The him right now was so frightened by Su Luo until he nearly cried.

This was what kind of goddamned speed! Following this, if her angling speed was all at a few seconds per fish, then even if you sold his entire fortune, it was not enough to compensate her.

The more the crown prince thought, the more afraid he became. His heart was extremely panicked, now, he was regretting it until his intestines were green! He wished he could give himself a few huge slaps!

If it weren't for him insisting on going over to provoke Su Luo, wanting to go look down upon her angling speed, how could there be these matters that occurred afterwards? It truly was shooting himself in the foot and not being able to live anymore!

Not mentioning the crown prince's intense and unstable state of mind, and solely speaking of Su Luo's side.

It seemed she had really made a firm resolution to have the crown prince lose everything.

In the moment it took for her to cast her fish hook into the sea, those Amethyst Thorned fishes that had avoided Lan Xuan and left, once again encircled that thin strand of fish line. They were outdoing one another to peck at that round fish bait, owing to the rush for it, it was too fierce to the extent that when Su Luo pulled up——

“Goddamn—— ! ! ! ”

Some people were so excited that they started to curse on the spot.

This was too freakishly unimaginable!!!

This time, it wasn't one fish, also wasn't two fishes, that very small fish hook actually had three fishes, three Amethyst Thorned fishes!

This was simply the biggest miracle since the beginning of history, an unprecedented marvel.

Who f\*cking said that hooking an Amethyst Thorned fish was harder than ascending to the sky? Who f\*cking said that Amethyst Thorned fish were very nimble? Who f\*cking said that an average of one fish in ten minutes was already at the level of gods?

Take a look at her, one fish in a few seconds, one fish hook could actually catch three Amethyst Thorned fishes. Moreover, each fish was not that small, and at one glance, you could tell that the fish were the bravest or strongest among the school of Amethyst Thorned fishes.

The mass of people standing in a circle watching this scene were exceedingly envious. Their pair of eyes were bloodshot, itching to rush up and take these three Amethyst Thorned fishes for themselves. They wished they could immediately be reborn as Su Luo, just fling a fishing line and would catch a string of Amethyst Thorned fishes. This would simply be too f\*cking pleasurable, don't you think? Even looting couldn't be this fast.

One Amethyst Thorned fish was equal to one green-colored crystal stone ah! It was just like a living treasure for cultivators and practitioners!

Now, the crown prince's complexion was exceptionally ugly, so gloomy and overcast that you could squeeze out droplets of water.

## Chapter 363 – Amethyst Thorned Island (14)

---

Su Luo's gaze swept past him, seeing him about to lose his cool, she sent him an even more taunting sentence: "Eh, all at once, the crown prince will give three green-colored crystal stones. This will make the crown prince spend some money, I'm truly sorry about this."

A mouthful of blood was stuck in the crown prince's throat.

Spit, couldn't spit it out.

Swallow, couldn't swallow it down.

It was really choking him until his complexion was ashen, both of his eyes were scarlet red, and his hands were trembling.

Beichen Ying had always had complete rapport with Su Luo, a flawless partnership, seeing this, he happily added another knife stab: "Sister-in-law, you need not be anxious on the crown prince's behalf. Within his magnificent palace far from here, there are many treasures. He's not afraid of being unable to afford to lose. In the worse case scenario, we could just carry everything away, including that magnificent palace of his."

The stuff in the magnificent palace had taken the crown prince more than ten years to collect, inside were countless number of treasures that would simply shock people.

The crown prince's pair of scarlet red eyes glared at Beichen Ying, wishing he could throw himself on him and choke his neck. This busybody, even if he didn't speak, nobody would think he was mute!

Su Luo nodded her head in approval: "Oh, this time, I feel reassured. Otherwise, I was afraid that the crown prince could not afford to lose this amount, so much so that I didn't dare to let go and fish with my all."

“Sister-in-law, you are simply too kind-hearted, too admirable, too charitable!” Beichen Ying made a big fuss over the littlest things, then exaggeratedly gestured and danced for joy. Finally, he again kind-heartedly consoled: “But you really ought to let go and have free rein to fish, otherwise, the crown prince will question the fairness of the competition.”

The crown prince was almost about to vomit blood.

If that loathsome girl uninhibitedly fished, why wouldn't he question the fairness of this competition? The crown prince was almost about to howl out this sentence! If that loathsome girl let go and fish, his magnificent palace would not not enough to pay for the loss.

Su Luo cast a glance at the face of the crown prince that was about to pass out. Her face was full of surprise and said: “Eh? So it seems good intentions still did bad things? Looks like I really need to feel relieved and boldly fish. Otherwise, the crown prince is certain to be unhappy.”

Lan Xuan, who was at the side, when he heard their unselfconscious dialogue, he was practically speechless.

Afterwards, Lan Xuan and Anye Ming exchanged a glance, both of their eyes had a forced smiling expression, and they sighed helplessly in unison.

Who said that now, the only person at a loss was the crown prince himself? Both of them were also very regretful, alright?

Now, the both of them, without exception, wanted to complain against Nangong's strategic methods.

This busybody for sure had already known that Su Luo had this ability earlier, so in the beginning, Nangong just one-upped them in a match. He manufactured a kind of 'she doesn't know how to hook an Amethyst Thorned fish' facade, making them lower their guards and feel too embarrassed to ask for a single Amethyst Thorned fish that she, a little Miss, would catch. As a result, they both made a solemn vow to decline her catch.

Now, when they saw Su Luo pulling the fishes up one by one, they were also very envious watching this, okay? They almost wished that time would flow backwards and return to that time when they were on the boat, so they could

rightfully and boldly request Su Luo to also hand over her Amethyst Thorned fish catches.

Beichen Ying smiling happily, bumping Lan Xuan's arm once: "Hey, didn't expect that Sister-in-law would be this awesome, right? Now, regretting until your intestines are green, right?"

"Shut up!" Lan Xuan hatefully glared at Beichen Ying, arrogantly and with frailty, he turned his face away, but facing the wind was the same, as two broad lines of tears appeared.

So many Amethyst Thorned fishes, originally, it should be divided evenly between him and little Ming...a blunder, a giant blunder, all conned away by Nangong, that big cheat.

Really, just thinking about it made him have a heartache...Lan Xuan exaggeratedly covered the place over his heart and cast a faintly blaming glance at Nangong Liuyun.

Who knew that this guy was not even a little bit sympathetic, instead, he returned a glance that was full of an imposing manner, indifferently saying: "What?"

What? What other could be there? Admiration, envy, regret, hate etc..these words were easy to say, but they didn't sound good. Lan Xuan could only wretchedly, silently and secretly be bitter as he once again turned his head away.

## Chapter 364 – Amethyst Thorned Island (15)

---

Since the beginning, Su Luo had already calculated everything well. This time she must swindle the crown prince fully and well. So, she never had any intent to hold back.

Following the passage of time, one after another, the Amethyst Thorned fishes were hooked by Su Luo.

Sometimes, one hook had two fishes, and other times, it had three.

Moreover, every time the bait was taken, it would absolutely not exceed ten seconds. It was almost like, once the fish hook was cast, it would always be like pulling up a string of fish.

This scene simply made all the surrounding people extremely stimulated. A lot of the people covered their chest, unable to stop shaking their head, expressing that they had been overly shocked.

The crown prince saw Su Luo's unbroken succession of casting down a hook to pull up a fish, and the muscles on his face continuously twitched and trembled. He was completely unable to suppress it.

His pair of eyes were both rigidly watching Su Luo, staring fixedly, from his former astonishment, shock, and disbelief, to now fury, regret and about to lose his head because of fear.

The majestic, stately crown prince, who seldom ever lost his head from fear, bestowed this honor on Su Luo.

How could he not be alarmed?

This was one Amethyst Thorned fish, which was one piece of green-colored crystal stone. The market price for one piece of green-colored crystal stone started at five thousand gold coins. However, you must often raise the price to

ten thousand gold coins before being able to buy one.

If she was just catching them one by one, then it was still unlikely to frighten the crown prince to this degree. The problem was that each time, Su Luo was pulling up strings of fishes....This simply was...Simply was....

Totally absurd! The crown prince heavily slapped down on the back of the chair. The nice, sturdy chair was instantly turned into dust.

The large noise created by the crown prince immediately attracted the attention of a lot of people.

“Alas, the pitiful crown prince, this time, I’m afraid he will lose all the way to his maternal grandmother’s family.”

“Oh dear, who would have imagined that this Miss from the Su family would be this amazing? These Amethyst Thorned fish seem as if they were reared in her home.”

“They say, it is still the crown prince who first went over to provoke her, right?”

“Oh, that’s true, if it isn’t the crown prince himself going over to provoke her, why would she compete with him on this? What is this called? This is called to sin against heaven is permitted, but to sin against one’s self, one cannot live.”

“Hush— —not so loud, don’t you see that the crown prince’s face is already green? Careful not to let him spill his fury over onto our bodies.”

Momentarily, everyone’s tongues were wagging.

Originally, in the beginning, practically everyone had predicted that Su Luo would be the one to suffer a crushing defeat. But now, under Su Luo’s accepted bullying strength, since then, the wind of that public opinion blew simply in the reverse direction. All the unfavorable rumors blew towards the crown prince.

The crown prince was already infuriated to the extreme, then to hear these rumors blowing in the wind, he was almost nearly driven mad.

His gloomy face, with a very fierce malicious gaze, swept a circle in front of his eyes. Places that were watched at by his gaze, everybody was unable to speak and frightened, lowered their heads. They were afraid that if they were not

careful, they could accidentally bump into the muzzle of a gun.

Su Luo saw the crown prince's panicked expression, and she became even more enthusiastic when fishing.

Now, that little wooden bucket of hers was already replaced with a super large wooden barrel since a long time ago.

Su Luo measured the super large wooden barrel with a glance, frowned slightly and again looked at Beichen Ying: "Looks like this wooden barrel also won't fit anymore, right?"

The smiling expression on Beichen Ying's clean face was exceedingly brilliant, seeing this, he vigorously nodded as if taking credit for something, and he happily smiled: "Sister-in-law, look, what is that?"

Su Luo followed along his gaze and looked, and saw that from their own luxurious yacht, a row of sailors came down. Every two of them formed a team, every team was carrying a super large wooden barrel. She gauged that those barrels were sufficient to hold a volume about the size of two adults.

Su Luo roughly counted, and found that there were about ten of them, for a moment, she was truly somewhat speechless.

The crown prince saw that row of wooden barrels, and the muscles on his face twitched and trembled even more violently.

## Chapter 365 – Amethyst Thorned Island (16)

---

Beichen Ying had always fought with the crown prince and won equal share of his limelight. He had never stood on the overwhelming side of victory like today. Everything here was all credited to Su Luo. Therefore, his feeling of adoration for Su Luo sprang up unbidden.

Thanks to this, Lan Xuan and Beichen Ying fought over who unhooked the fishes, therefore, in order to raise efficiency, Su Luo arranged it as followed, making her fishing flow like the course of a stream of running water.

Lan Xuan baited the hook. Su Luo cast the fishing rod and reeled in the fishing line. Beichen Ying, meanwhile, unhooked the fish, coming like a running stream of water and immediately promoting the efficiency to its peak. Often, within less than ten seconds, they could smoothly catch a wave of fish.

The crown prince expressed his objections, but his objections were very quickly overruled.

The mass of people standing around watching were already dumbfounded by this scene, while more and more people came to watch.

Some people basically had no inclination to fish themselves, some smart people also came over with a fishing rod to squeeze for a position to fish, thinking that a little of Su Luo's good luck would rub off on them too.

However, these people did not know, exactly because of having Su Luo's fish food as contrast, their fish food were even more disdained by the fishes, and so they were even more unable to hook a fish. This was called being too smart for their own good.

One hour had passed...

Two hours had passed...

Two and one half hours had passed...

Beichen Ying looked at the time, and in the last second, yelled: "Time's up ——" "

As a result, both sides laid down their fishing rods and allowed the referee to examine the result.

This examination of the results was really entirely focused on inspecting Su Luo's catch, because the crown prince didn't hook even a single fish.

The root cause being; one, his mood was unstable, two, he had given up from despair, and the most important third reason, was that with Su Luo's fish food as contrast, it was therefore even more impossible for the crown prince to hook a fish. All the Amethyst Thorned fishes went over and were circling around Su Luo's fish hook.

Therefore, this time, his success was the most rotten since the beginning of history, harvesting zero fish.

That's right, the majestic and stately crown prince unexpectedly didn't even catch one Amethyst Thorned fish. This was simply the greatest blow to him under the heavens.

Maybe the crown prince also felt that it was quite disgraceful, from beginning to end, his face was black, his face was paralyzed in an expression of wishing he could execute everyone using death by a thousand cuts.

"Come, come, come, now we will count how many Amethyst Thorned fish Miss Su hooked. Ha ha, everyone is looking forward to it, full of curiosity. Everyone really wants to know how many fishes our great, benevolent, bursting-with-good-luck Miss Su hooked in the end, right?"

Beichen Ying, in the role of referee, didn't have even a little of a referee's awareness. Once his thoroughly disparaging and provocative words fell, everyone's zeal and enthusiasm was all mobilized, making everyone completely overlook the crown prince.

Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan and Anye Ming, these three originally aloof, distinguished young masters and descendants of aristocratic families, had now been transformed into little brother-like servants. They were all over there,

helping Su Luo count the fishes.

After checking the numbers, Lan Xuan and Anye Ming exchanged a glance. Both of them had their hands over their chest, with bitterly grieving expressions of being repeatedly regretful. Afterwards, they both looked towards Su Luo wretchedly...Looking at those little sad expressions, it really made a person want to take pity on them.

However, after experiencing Nangong Liuyun's honey traps, this trick was already entirely useless on Su Luo.

Beichen Ying very smugly cast a glance at the crown prince, happily and smilingly saying: "Nangong Liujue, do you want to know how many green-colored crystal stones you lost?"

The crown prince's complexion right now could be described as deathly pale.

His hands hidden in his sleeves trembled non-stop, making even the sleeves shake slightly.

As a nation's crown prince, this kind of essential quality of the heart was really unacceptable.

Beichen Ying appreciatively stretched out the crown prince's panicked expression, only then did he slowly give a sigh and very kind-heartedly told him

——

## Chapter 366 – Amethyst Thorned Island (17)

---

Beichen Ying laughed loudly: “According to the recently checked numbers, Nangong Liujue... that’s one thousand five hundred heavenly Amethyst Thorned fishes ah! That is to say, you owe one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones, ha ha ha——!”

Beichen Ying tucked his hands at his waist and laughed wildly on the spot, simply too pleased with the result that he couldn’t handle it. Yet, the crown prince’s face turned green in a split second, his figure swayed, nearly unable to stand steadily on his feet.

It was not only the crown prince, at this moment, the people that were there watching all sucked in a huge breath of air, practically on the verge of fainting.

One thousand five hundred Amethyst Thorned fish?

One thousand five hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones?

The crown prince had truly lost miserably ah.

Not to mention the crown prince, even the whole Eastern Ling capital might not be able to pool together that much within such a short time, right?

Everyone was anxiously gazing at the crown prince, inquisitively sizing him up, not knowing what he would do.

When Beichen Ying saw the crown prince’s black face that was like the bottom of a pot, he walked over and patted him on the shoulder, very kindly consoling him: “Isn’t it just one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones? For you, that’s a very simple matter, isn’t it?”

Simple your ass! The crown prince gave Beichen Ying an indignant and harsh glare.

If it was one hundred fifty green-colored crystal stones, he would still be able

sell things and pool it together, and more or less be able to scrape together enough. But one thousand five hundred pieces.....they might as well just kill him directly.

The crown prince flung back his head, and directly spouted out one phrase: “Don’t have it!”

Beichen Ying laughed more craftily than even a fox: “So many people are staring intently at you, Nangong Liujue, you really have the nerve to renege on the debts? A crown prince that doesn’t have any credibility worth talking about is not a good crown prince oh. In the future, this will become your biggest obstacle to ascending the imperial throne oh; our Beichen family will be unlikely to consent to you occupying the top seat oh.”

“You— —” The crown prince glared furiously at Beichen Ying. Would this person die if he didn’t oppose him? Would he die?

“Our Lan family also will not consent oh.” Lan Xuan used one hand to lean on Beichen Ying’s shoulder, guffawing while gazing at the crown prince.

“The Anye family will also not approve.” Anye Ming, with a smile that was yet not a smile, raised his eyebrow, and gazed at the crown prince with interest.

“You all— —you all— —” The crown prince had not thought that these people would actually stick their head out for a no-name loathsome girl, and the rage in his heart became even more rigorous.

Actually, what he was most furious about was— —

If at that time he had not withdrawn from the engagement, that loathsome girl would be an object in his possession. Then today, this great number of Amethyst Thorned fish would be his, all his! Now, he wouldn’t be in this situation of being pressed for the repayment of debts and practically put on the spot, rather, he would be in reaping it in during this harvest season.

So long as he thought of this, a stabbing pain would throb unceasingly in the crown prince’s heart, hurting so much that he nearly could not breathe.

Finally, the crown prince gave a hateful glare at Su Luo, and yelled at Beichen Ying: “Even if you want your payment, it shouldn’t be right now, this prince doesn’t carry that many green-colored crystal stones on me.”

Beichen Ying nonchalantly waved his hand: “Not a problem, wait until after returning, we will naturally come to find you to pay it back.. If you still won’t recompense in full at that time, naturally, we will then go call upon your father to demand repayment ”

“Seconded.” Lan Xuan happily said while raising his eyebrow.

“Seconded +1.” Anye Ming also while smiling splendidly, watched the crown prince.

These people, abominable! Simply too abominable!

The crown prince angrily flung his sleeves, and grandiosely led a group of people away.

Beichen Ying consoled Su Luo, saying: “Sister-in-law, don’t be afraid. This debt, naturally we will get it back for you on your behalf. He he, this time, if we don’t make Nangong Liujue bankrupt, then my last name is not Beichen!”

Su Luo smilingly nodded her head: “Then that’s really great, if it was me, I wouldn’t be able to get this debt back.”

Beichen Ying adoringly looked at Su Luo: “In the end, Sister-in-law is still the most capable one. I’ve been contending with him for so many years, yet this is the first time I’ve seen him lose this badly, this depressingly. Hahaha, I’m truly happy to death.”

## Chapter 367 – Amethyst Thorned Island (18)

---

Su Luo smiled and instructed people to carry all the Amethyst Thorned fish onto the luxurious yacht.

The sky darkened but was not completely black, the line of sight was unclear and hazy from the rising moon.

Suddenly, a person among the group of people cried out in alarm: “Look, what is that?!”

Everyone’s gaze turned to look in that direction.

One could only see a white shadow appearing on the sea surface, it seemed really close, but at the same time really far away. It was rocking and flickering, and couldn’t be seen very clearly.

However, Nangong Liuyun’s phoenix eyes narrowed slightly, a trace of surprise appearing in his eyes. When his gaze turned and landed on Su Luo, a smiling expression was at the corner of his mouth.

This girl’s luck...Maybe she really was the illegitimate daughter of the goddess of fortune? Even this kind of rarely seen, once every hundred years’s fortuitous meeting, was encountered by her? Really didn’t know what he ought to say.

“That is....” Beichen Ying’s eyes flashed as if simply in disbelief. He turned his gaze towards Nangong Liuyun, as if wishing he could confirm something.

“So arcane!” Lan Xuan had an extremely astonished expression on his face. He was so excited that he was immediately about to burst out with obscene language. Both of his hands were even tightly clenched into fists, so excited that he almost couldn’t control himself.

“Inconceivable....too inconceivable...” Anye Ming’s eyes narrowed slightly, he gazed deeply at the white shadow that suddenly appeared in the distance. He

repeatedly shook his head and sighed.

Su Luo somewhat doubtfully swept these three a glance.

What was going on?

Why were each and every one of them looking at that white shadow on the sea surface with expressions of longing, aspiration and hope? Their eyes also had a tint of seeing something mystical? Could it be related to some inside information that she didn't know?

“Go board the yacht.” Nangong Liuyun raised his sleeves and very naturally led Su Luo along. He brought a group of people and grandiosely walked towards the yacht.

Not limited to Nangong Liuyun's group of people, almost all the people present had discovered the peculiar thing on the sea surface. Those smart people had already boarded their yacht earlier and sailed towards that white shadow with flying speed.

Along the way, there were constant yells from people, with heart-tearing, lung-splitting, screaming voices shouting out something called ‘Amethyst Fish Palace’.

Amethyst Fish Palace? What kind of thing was it?

After returning to the yacht, Su Luo asked this question like a very curious baby. However, just after she asked, she was collectively looked down on by everyone.

Beichen Ying was simply helplessly at a loss with her: “Sister-in-law, did you live in a vacuum for the ten or so years before? You actually don't even know about the Amethyst Fish Palace?”

Lan Xuan meticulously and carefully looked Su Luo up and down, holding his chin and pondering with a harboring-evil-designs expression as he leaned close to her: “Sister-in-law, one hundred Amethyst Thorned fish in exchange for the answer, deal?”

“I order you to go away.” Beichen Ying directly lifted away Lan Xuan who was trying to take advantage to loot her, “You, Lan fourth old man's, mouth is really expensive. A matter that takes merely a sentence and your asking price is

actually one hundred Amethyst Thorned fish.”

Sure enough, Beichen Ying was a good child, Su Luo waited for him to clear up her confusion.

Unexpectedly, once Beichen Ying cast Lan Xuan aside, he himself leaned in close to Su Luo and while smiling happily, said: “Sister-in-law, I’ll give you a twenty percent discount. I’ll only take eighty Amethyst Thorned fish.”

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth twitched, she held her forehead and looked towards the sky.

This group of foolishly cute people!

Su Luo immediately gazed towards Nangong Liuyun.

Beichen Ying was just about to console Su Luo with that Nangong Liuyun would never say these superfluous words.

But Nangong Liuyun only pulled Su Luo by the hand and helped her sit down properly, full of interest in fiddling with her slim fingers, then softly told her: “Amethyst Fish Palace is related to the Amethyst Thorned fish. Almost every hundred years, it would appear once, therefore drawing out all the experts from all directions who would fall over each other in their eagerness to come. Also, every time, it’s practically a bloodbath.”

Nangong Liuyun really suspected that this time, the appearance of the Amethyst Fish Palace might have something to do with Su Luo catching large quantities of Amethyst Thorned fish.

“A bloodbath?” Su Luo blinked her eyes with some misgivings.

Nangong Liuyun rubbed her head, a heavy and imposing manner flashed across his expression.

## Chapter 368 – Amethyst Thorned Island (19)

---

Nangong Liuyun said: “Indeed, because within the Amethyst Fish Palace, are countless treasures, enough treasures that are regarded as important to all parties.”

“It would appear once every hundred years? For what reason?”

“Nobody knows why, we only know that there are countless number of treasures in the Amethyst Fish Palace. As long as your luck is good, your harvest will not be lacking.” Nangong Liuyun swept a glance at those dauntless ships directly chasing behind them, and the corner of his mouth hooked up faintly, “Those people experienced a thrill traveling across a body of water with waterspouts to come. It is not as simple as coming here to hook Amethyst Thorned fishes, a huge part of the reason is to try their luck at encountering the Amethyst Fish Palace.”

Only could be encountered once every hundred years, moreover, nobody could determine which year, therefore, they could only try their luck.

However, he didn't expect that the first time Su Luo came, she was able to run into this marvel that happened every hundred years. It could be said that her luck was so good as to be overflowing.

Amethyst Fish Palace? Su Luo's gaze was fixated to that distant place, she started to have a little expectation towards the Amethyst Fish Palace.

Before, when they were on the Amethyst Thorned Island and saw that white shadow, it always felt as if it was very close, but now that the yacht was flying towards it, even after a long time, they had not arrived.

Nangong Liuyun's yacht was not only the most lavish, its performance was also the best, therefore, it occupied the position ahead of everyone else.

The crown prince's cruise ship resided in second place.

At this moment, the crown prince's face didn't have that depression and maliciousness from the beginning.

He didn't expect that his luck would be this good, therefore, as the proverb said, it was a blessing in disguise.

In the situation just a moment ago, he had even lost his underpants, this scene was like the light at the end of the tunnel. Unexpectedly, the rare encounter that occurred every hundred years, the Amethyst Fish Palace, appeared.

Amethyst Fish Palace ah, that was the legendary, rumored Amethyst Fish Palace that had exceedingly numerous treasures! Maybe his luck would be very good and he would pick up an item of spirit treasure with a value that could surpass more than one thousand green-colored crystal stones!

Humph, humph, want to force me into bankruptcy? In the next lifetime!

"Ah, that is...." Beichen Ying watched as a skiff rapidly sailed towards their yacht, a heavy expression flashing across his face.

On top of that skiff stood two people, a man and a woman.

The man was clad in ink blue, embroidered clothes from head to toe, and the ice blue, jade belt tied at his waist was not ordinary. He had an imposing and threatening manner.

The woman was dressed in white from head to toe, appearing to be an otherworldly fairy that was above the common people. She was exceedingly refined, free from vulgarity, so beautiful as to be non-existent in this earthly world.

"Li Yaoyao?" Lan Xuan saw that woman whose beauty nearly made people suffocate, and couldn't help but frown. Then, maintaining his composure, he cast a glance towards Nangong Liuyun, and stayed on Su Luo's face for an extra half a second more.

The Jade Lake Fairy Li Yaoyao, her feelings toward Nangong Liuyun, as childhood friends that grew up together, how could they not know?

Usually, this matter was nothing, but now, Nangong clearly was already moved

by Luo girl. Then, Li Yaoyao coming over at this moment, wasn't it...This time, there would be a good play to watch.

Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan, and Anye Ming, the three of them covertly shared a meaningful glance. Afterwards, full of tacit understanding, their gazes poured onto Nangong Liuyun's body.

Two females fighting over a man, a good play was about to go on stage.

These bad friends all cast ill-natured, sidelong glances at Nangong Liuyun, looking at his face, full of expectation for a trace of a clue.

However, they would be disappointed.

Nangong Liuyun's complexion was like always, not a thread of change could be seen on his handsome face. Only, Su Luo was able to feel that his hand that was gripping hers had increased in strength.

The Jade Lake's Fairy... Su Luo's eyes slightly narrowed, watching that continuously approaching skiff, and cold rays of light burst forth from her eyes.

Heh heh, really didn't expect to meet at this time, this place, and see this woman who had repeatedly tried to kill me previously.

Nangong Liuyun, this time, what will you do? Will you still be duty-bound to shield her without looking back?

## Chapter 369 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (1)

---

She was unlike other aristocratic family’s women that would immediately show her haughtiness on the surface. The Jade Lake’s Fairy cast an indifferent gaze at Su Luo, a pure, shallow, smiling expression appeared on her face: “Miss Su is also here.”

Su Luo smiled: “Yes, what a coincidence.”

The two people finished greeting each other in a manner that was neither warm nor cold, and didn’t speak again.

At this moment, from behind the Jade Lake’s Fairy body, walked out a man.

One could see him stand with his head held high and upright. His body was tall, straight and slender, appearing impressive with a loftiness that was out of the ordinary. Especially that pair of eyes, extremely sharp like a hawk, glittering like frost and snow. They had a grandeur that intimidated others and overwhelmed people.

He swept his eyes over the surroundings once with a sharp, hawk-like gaze that completely ignored Su Luo.

Apparently, in his eyes, Su Luo was merely an unnecessary existence, as insignificant as an ant that he could single-handedly crush to death.

“Oh, Li Aofeng (1), what wind managed to blow such a great holy Buddha like you here?” Beichen Ying folded his arms over his chest and cast a glance at him with a ghost of a smile.

Li Aotian, as the name implied, his haughtiness soared to the skies, his conduct and bearing were very proud and aloof.

This person would boast in that the social circle of aristocratic families, his talent was unsurpassed. Normally, he was arrogant and seemed aloof from

politics and material pursuits. Beichen Palace and Jade Lake Palace were opponents from afar that often competed. The two Palaces' relationship was always complicated, therefore, Beichen Ying was always rude towards Li Aotian.

Li Aotian indifferently shot a glance at Beichen Ying and gave an icily arrogant snort. With regards to Beichen Ying, who was at the same level as him, he was still unworthy of his attention.

Li Yaoyao gave Beichen Ying an apologetic smile: "My second elder brother's temperament is usually like this, you should also know this, by all means, don't take offense."

The corner of Beichen Ying's mouth lifted into an arc and he absent-mindedly said: "Younger sister Yaoyao is apologizing, as the older brother, I naturally have nothing to say. Come, sit down so we can talk."

In this play, he was merely a warm body to use as place holder, the real lead still needed to be handed over to Nangong, and watch how he was about to act out this play well.

In Beichen Ying's eyes shone a burning radiance, his pair of peach blossom eyes were full of a gossiping overtone.

Li Yaoyao very naturally sat down at Nangong's left side. Quite familiarly, she coiled around Nangong's arm full of smiles, her smile showing off shallow dimples. She subtly said in a low voice: "Today, third senior brother is here to catch Amethyst Thorned fish, you must have won an overwhelming victory?"

Su Luo's gaze dwelled on the Jade Lake Fairy coiling around Nangong Liuyun's arm, that very familiar manner, as if the two of them were frequently like this. Somewhat like a male-female pair being protected and what-not, as if they were not affected by the world.

Nangong's gaze was demonically charming, he raised an eyebrow and smiled. Then, he shook his head enigmatically but did not say a word.

Su Luo noticed that Nangong Liuyun hadn't resisted Jade Lake Fairy's intimacy and he also didn't push her away, she who was coiled around his arm, indulging in closeness.

The two people spoke, acting as if nobody else was present. Their voices were

so low as if sharing a secret between them, with a manner that was so close that nothing could come between them.

The man was handsome beyond compare, the woman was exceedingly refined. With one glance, it could be seen that they were a pair of jade annulus, a couple that was a match made in heaven.

The scenario appeared to be framed by a screen, isolating those two people in their own world, while others all became the landscape that set them off beautifully.

Su Luo withdrew her hand quietly from Nangong's large palm, but this time, Nangong Liuyun didn't insist, to the extent that Su Luo was easily able to withdraw her hands.

Seeing their intimate manner that left no space for others to squeeze in, seeing Nangong Liuyun's intoxicating eyes pampering and spoiling, gentle feelings for her....

A bitter smile emerged in Su Luo's heart. Her gaze turned away towards the ocean in the distance with its surging momentum.

1) 李傲风 – *this was either a typo by the author for Li Aotian's name or Beichen Ying was being sarcastic and changed the Tian (sky) to Feng (wind) in Li Aotian's name to go with what he was saying.*

## Chapter 370 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (2)

---

Nangong Liuyun, Beichen Ying said you seldom open your heart and treat someone well, did you know I believed it? A little bit, just short by a little bit, I would have started to like you... Short by just a little bit...

As expected, the safest way was to strictly guard one’s own heart. She must not lightly hand over her heart.

Su Luo, ah, Su Luo, have you forgotten the painful lesson from the previous life? Now, you still want to follow the path to disaster? Fancy that you still call yourself someone who had lived two lifetimes, you actually couldn’t even see this reason clearly!

A self-deprecating bitter smile played across Su Luo’s face, a lonely and pained look flashed through her eyes.

Beichen Ying noticed that although Su Luo’s face was unaffected, yet her tranquil, deep eyes were like condensed frost. His heart felt somewhat apologetic, and giving a clear cough, interrupted the two people’s intimate heated chat.

“Yaoyao younger sister, you guys also appearing is too coincidental, right? We only just discovered the Amethyst Fish Palace ah? And you guys just happen to come over?”

Jade Lake Fairy paused, her smile was shallow and pure, mysterious and charming: “Venerable grandfather predicted that there was unusual movement on the East Sea and calculating the time, figured it was extremely possible for the Amethyst Fish Palace to appear. As a result, we came.”

A simple short piece of dialogue, broke off that vague, charmingly and gentle atmosphere from a moment ago.

“The orders of grandfather shows he is truly quick-witted and clever, worthy of being called Jade Lake Palace’s Sea Stabilizing Divine Needle (1), a position no one is able to shake.” Beichen Ying’s smile was not quite a smile.

The Jade Lake Fairy smilingly started to chat with Beichen Ying: “Oh, that’s right, you guys came to fish for Amethyst Thorned Fish, right? Did you hook some? Let’s roast some fish to eat, what do you say?”

Lan Xuan cast a quick glance at the Jade Lake’s Fairy: “Beichen’s buttock was beaten to pieces by his old man, so he remembers his lessons, where would he still find the courage to eat it?”

The Jade Lake’s Fairy appeared to have recalled something, then covered her vermilion lips and was consumed by laughter.

This emotion and this scenery, Su Luo’s eyes slightly narrowed, it gave her an illusion of being outside looking in.

With just that one topic, the Jade Lake Fairy was able to lead them to their youthful years. This kind of being excluded feeling that was saying ‘all of us are childhood friends that played and grew up together with everything being understood among us, whereas you are merely an outsider who shouldn’t even think of coming in as an interloper’. This made Su Luo feel somewhat uncomfortable.

Lan Xuan saw Su Luo’s expression was dim, and he smilingly approached her: “Sister-in-law, you still haven’t heard of this awkward incident of Beichen’s, right? Come, come, come, one hundred Amethyst Thorned fish...”

Lan Xuan had not yet finished speaking, before the Jade Lake’s Fairy cut in first. She protested coquettishly and slanted a glance at Lan Xuan: “What nonsense are you saying? You haven’t even looked to see if Miss Su could even hook one hundred Amethyst Thorned fish first? Even one fish is unlikely, okay? And you still ask for so much like a lion with it mouth open wide.”

Only after she finished, did she become aware that she might have said too much. So, she smiled towards Su Luo: “Miss Su, don’t take any offense, I was merely stating the truth, there wasn’t any intent to look down on you.”

If she didn’t say anything, then it was not that bad. Once it was said, it seemed

even more like she was trying to cover it up but was just making it worse.

If it was to be said that the Jade Lake's Fairy was merely inserting a sharp knife a moment ago, then the sentence just now was like pulling that knife out, and at exactly the same place, she stabbed the knife in deeply once again.

At this moment, Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan and Anye Ming, all three of their complexions were slightly strange. Beichen Ying gave an even clearer cough, and tilted his head away. He really couldn't steel himself to the task of telling this story in order to strike a blow at Li Yaoyao.

Su Luo smiled lightly, expressing that she didn't care, and then nodded towards Lan Xuan: "You speak."

This showed she agreed to this business transaction.

In any case, Su Luo girl was rich and imposing, it was merely a hundred Amethyst Thorned fish and nothing more. In front of her type of rich, conspicuous spender, what did a mere hundred Amethyst Thorned fish count as? If he was to take a little, she still would have a fortune left.

Lan Xuan's heart was immediately jubilant, and he shifted towards Su Luo's current position.

*1) Sea Stabilizing Divine Needle: The backbone or pillar that held the family up.*

## Chapter 371 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (3)

---

Thus, Lan Xuan sold Beichen Ying’s awkward incident without any hesitation nor guilt. One could only see him covering his stomach and laughing heartily for quite a while.

Finally, he slowly began to speak, “Sister-in-law, you may not know, at that time, we were still kids. Beichen Family was celebrating his father’s birthday, and we all followed our elders and went to Beichen Palace. That year, there were people gifting Amethyst Thorned Fish to congratulate him, and indeed, that Amethyst Thorned fish’s size was truly huge. That fish was about several hundred years old, and it was almost going to become a mystical spirit. At that time, Beichen’s old man was extremely happy and was saving it in preparation for other important uses. But several of us, being underaged and ignorant, stole that Amethyst Thorned fish, ran behind the mountain, and roasted it.”

Explaining up to here, Lan Xuan paused, as if the things that happened afterwards were too funny. And again, he covered his stomach and started to laugh uproariously with ‘ow, ow, ow’ sounds.

Anye Ming couldn’t stand it any longer: “Are you still going to tell it or not? If you won’t tell it, then I will.” It just so happened that he could split that one hundred Amethyst Thorned fishes in half.

Lan Xuan, with one hand, pushed Anye Ming aside and seized the opportunity to sit by Su Luo’s side. Smiling, he continued to explain it to her: “Afterwards, this matter, we naturally were unable to conceal it. After Beichen Ying’s old man found out, he was infuriated half to death. Beichen Ying’s elder uncle was even more straightforward. He dangled little Shadow (1) back home and was going to beat him with a wooden plank. At that time, the few of us were extremely scared, in the end, it was Nangong who came up with a plan. Can you guess what method he came up with?”

Beat with a wooden plank? But with Nangong there to come up with a plan, very likely, this scene of Beichen Ying undergoing corporal punishment, Beichen Ying would not be eating a loss.

Su Luo smiled while shaking her head, Lan Xuan had a worshipful expression as he said: “For sure, you would not have imagined it. Back then, nobody knows where Nangong stole a fresh piece of meat from the magical beast Iron Armed Ape. He stuck it firmly to the back of Beichen’s butt, consequently, when Beichen’s elder uncle struck down with the plank, immediately, Beichen’s little butt was saturated with bloodstains, it was a carnage with blood and flesh flying. Right away, it frightened Beichen’s elder uncle until his face was green. Hahahahaha——”

She didn’t expect that the current them, where each and every one of them were full of noble aura, would be this naughty in their childhood.

Su Luo seemed very interested and asked: “And afterwards?”

“Afterwards, Beichen’s grandmother’s heart was so distressed and regretful that she almost swooned. Completely disregarding the full house of guests, she immediately lifted her walking stick and chased after Beichen’s elder uncle around the courtyard while hitting him with her walking stick. Beichen’s old man was not careful and was also hit a few times, hahahaha——” Recalling this awkward incident at that time, Lan Xuan held his stomach, laughing until he almost started to roll around on the ground.

Having gone through Lan Xuan’s period of impromptu comical material, the stiff atmosphere eased up somewhat. Su Luo couldn’t help but have a little more of a favorable impression of this lively Lan Xuan. She felt that he was a good kid and decided to gift him a few more Amethyst Thorned fishes for free.

The Jade Lake’s fairy naturally knew this entertaining story more clearly than Su Luo, what she noticed was not this story per se, rather, how Lan Xuan addressed Su Luo.

Lan Xuan inadvertently said ‘sister-in-law’, perhaps, he didn’t even remember it himself. However, the sensitive Jade Lake’s Fairy, how could she not have heard?

The hands she concealed in her sleeves tightened some more, then her face

burst open into a quiet and content smiling expression. With a reproachful expression, she annoyedly took a quick glance at Lan Xuan: “What are you doing, saying this kind of stuff in front of Miss Su? It’s not as if she is a person from our circle. If she knows too much, on the contrary, it would not be good for her.”

She turned and smilingly looked at Su Luo: “Miss Su, I speak pretty bluntly. You will not take offense, right?”

The Jade Lake’s Fairy wouldn’t feel at ease if she didn’t suppress Su Luo every moment.

Su Luo raised an eyebrow and smiled, declining to comment.

The Jade Lake’s Fairy smilingly looked at Nangong Liuyun, shaking his sleeves and pouting playfully, said: “Third senior brother, weren’t you just chatting very easily with Miss Su? Why is it that now you are ignoring her? Third senior brother is really too much, I just arrived here, and at once, you snubbed Miss Su. How would others see me as?”

*1) I’m just going to do a direct translation of Beichen Ying’s nickname here. The Ying in Beichen Ying is part of the word ‘shadow’ in English. Adding the 子 give you the complete English word shadow. So I’m just going to translate it as Little Shadow rather than Little Ying Zi.*

## Chapter 372 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (4)

---

Without waiting for Nangong Liuyun to speak, she again smilingly said to Su Luo: “Miss Su, Nangong is just like this, didn’t take care of you satisfactorily before, so please don’t mind it.”

She had the posture of a main female hostess.

Su Luo indifferently cast Nangong Liuyun a glance, the corner of her mouth rising into a ridiculing arc.

It was not that long ago, that this man was determined to hold her hand and lead her walking by in front of everyone while strutting around. He had an appearance of cupping a treasure in the center of his palm. Right now, she seemed to be superfluous, no, not seeming, rather, of course she was superfluous.

Could it be she was merely there to fill in the loneliness, emptiness and coldness when the Jade Lake’s Fairy was not around?

Su Luo had this ridiculing expression as she looked at Nangong Liuyun, but this stingy guy didn’t even bother to give her a glance and directly acted as if she didn’t exist.

Men ah, truly mercurial! Su Luo’s heart was sour, and slanted her head away to look at the landscape outside.

Beichen Ying was always aware of Li Yaoyao’s gentle, soft and tender appearance on the surface, while her heart was incomparably strong. He saw Su Luo’s dramatic change, and wanted to say something to rectify this, but was broken off by Su Luo.

Su Luo smilingly said: “What taking offense? The Jade Fairy is being overly sensitive.”

Su Luo conceded to her the position of main female hostess on Nangong Liuyun's yacht.

She had numerous words that would put the Jade Lake's fairy on the spot, however...was it worth it?

This man's heart, from beginning to end, only had the Jade Lake's fairy, not a single moment would he not protect her. Again, for what reason, should she vie for him with the Jade Lake's Fairy? What was there that was worth fighting over? Could she even manage to win it over? Even if she was able to win it over, what was the use?

However, Su Luo had not anticipated that Nangong Liuyun's face would, in an instant, condense into frost. His pair of beautiful eyes was like a millennium-old glacier, revealing sharp, ice-cold rays of light, giving off a trace of cold intent.

The Jade Lake's Fairy didn't seem to be aware of it and smilingly said to Su Luo: "That's right, is Miss Su also here to hook some Amethyst Thorned fishes?"

"Came to see the world." Su Luo stingily and lightly replied.

The Jade Lake's Fairy saw Su Luo's lonely expression and smiling in a consoling manner, said: "Miss Su, you need not be so broken-hearted, Amethyst Thorned fishes are usually hard to catch. Even more so with your foundations...therefore, not catching one is reasonable. When I was five years old, it was my first time coming, and back then, I also didn't catch a single fish. Therefore, you really needn't be so heartbroken."

Once these words were said, the expressions of everyone present were even stranger than before.

The Jade Lake's Fairy was immersed in the joy of Su Luo automatically withdrawing and the blow she dealt her, that she became so careless as to not sense the peculiarity in people's expressions. Her smile was as splendid and dazzling as a hundred flowers.

But a mocking expression flashed through Su Luo's eyes.

The Jade Lake's Fairy's heart was thrown into disorder.

The person who had the so-called concerned mind was now thrown into

upheaval. Such a noble, virtuous and aloof little princess from the Jade Lake Palace, because of Nangong Liuyun, let go of her womanly appearance to personally go into battle and ended up humiliating herself. It also could be considered too tough on her.

What meanings her words had, everybody was well aware of, unfortunately, her news lagged behind too much. And she still wasn't aware that Su Luo was now a third rank, and not a good-for-nothing waste anymore.

She held the five-year-old her in comparison to Su Luo...She really thought too highly of herself ah.

Su Luo's eyes that could distinguish black from white was like water, so clear you could see to the bottom. Her gaze met those of the Jade Lake's Fairy's, and the corner of Su Luo's eyes poked up as the corner of her mouth hooked up slightly, indifferently saying: "The Jade Lake's Fairy, you mustn't console me. Why is it that I feel more heartbroken the more you try to console me?"

The Jade Lake's Fairy, this 'giving oneself airs of consoling', if the essence of her heart fell short just a little, then wasn't it that the more you listen to her, the more deeply hurt you feel?

But Su Luo's truthful sentence was like poking at a bee's nest, one could only see the Jade Lake's Fairy's expression freezing, momentarily, a layer of shallow fog appeared in that pair of huge, clear eyes. She gave off an appearance of having her heart seriously wounded.

## Chapter 373 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (5)

---

With an expression of self-blame and feeling guilty until she almost cried, she said: “Miss Su, are you in the midst of blaming me? But I am truly concerned about you, how could you say such things about me?”

Su Luo also didn’t expect that the kind of noble, virtuous and icily arrogant Jade Lake’s Fairy she had first met back then, would in a split second, change into a lovely, pitiful, delicate, white lotus flower. She couldn’t help but give her a thumbs up in her heart.

She really could act, her performance was truly great.

Look at that lovely, pitiful, little appearance, it was a much better act when compared to Lan Xuan and their performance earlier. If Lan Xuan and them had this kind of acting skills, not to say one hundred Amethyst Thorned fishes, even one thousand fishes, she would present it to them without blinking an eye.

The Jade Lake’s Fairy was still not finished, her slender fair hand tugged at Nangong Liuyun’s sleeves with an appealing-for-fairness-and-justice manner: “Third senior brother, you say, just a moment ago, what I said, isn’t it truly because I was concerned about Miss Su? I really didn’t expect that her inner heart would be this weak. I really didn’t do it on purpose.”

Nangong Liuyun merely looked at her with an indifferent smile and didn’t speak a word.

“Third senior brother, why don’t you say something? Only you can get back justice for me.” Delicate as a white lotus flower, that pair of beautiful eyes was misty with tears. If she hadn’t seen it with her own eyes, everyone would believe that she had suffered endless times of being wronged.

Su Luo raised an eyebrow, with a ghost of a smile, she cast a sidelong glance at Nangong Liuyun. She really wanted to see what kind of justice Nangong Liuyun

would deal out.

Yet, Nangong Liuyun still hadn't stepped forth to declare his position before another man, that had stood by the Jade Lake's Fairy's side since the beginning, stepped out. He glared threateningly at Su Luo with an imposing manner.

The double-edged sword in his hand suddenly thrust out.

“Dare to be disrespectful to Yaoyao, courting death!”

Li Aotian's voice was proud and coldly detached, his longsword was even more sinister and bone-chilling. It showed no quarter as it thrust towards Su Luo's throat.

Nobody would have anticipated that Li Aotian actually said he would take action, and immediately did just that. Moreover, he went straight for a killing maneuver.

Also, what kind of person was Li Aotian? He was Jade Lake Palace's younger generation's number two master expert, now, he was already at the sixth rank, merely one short rank below Nangong Liuyun, and nothing more.

The ice-cold long sword thrust towards Su Luo's throat, relentlessly—

Su Luo's eyes were as serene as water.

Nangong Liuyun, will you look on unfeelingly as I fall in a pool of blood?

The corner of Su Luo's mouth lifted into a fireworks kind of desolate smile.

Just when the longsword was at a distance about a hand's width from Su Luo's throat, all of a sudden, a fine, white finger with distinct joints, abruptly appeared, and lightly flicked that longsword. Immediately, that imposing and threatening longsword unexpectedly twisted to the side, cleanly brushing pass Su Luo's slim neck.

“Nangong Liuyun!” Li Aotian, utterly discomfited, glared at Nangong.

He didn't expect that Nangong Liuyun would take action at the very last second.

Hadn't Yaoyao already pulled to stop him? Wasn't he already intimate with Yaoyao to the point that nothing could come between them?

Nangong Liuyun slowly stood up, his sideways glance meeting up with the Jade Lake's Fairy's gaze. The corner of his mouth was hooked into an extremely weird smile, he reached out his hands to brush his sleeves. He easily flicked away the Jade Lake's Fairy's hand that was wrapped around his arm with not the least bit of tenderness, directly and efficiently.

The Jade Lake's Fairy looked in astonishment at her comforting hand that was just removed, in a daze, she stared fixedly at Nangong Liuyun: "Third senior brother..."

"Uhm." Nangong Liuyun unhurriedly walked to Su Luo's side and stood side by side with her. He smiled a smile that was yet not one at the Jade Lake's Fairy. He then raised an eyebrow and smilingly said, but his tone was deeply cold: "It's good that you still remember I am your third senior brother."

"Third senior brother..." The Jade Lake's Fairy took a step forward, wretchedly looking at this figure that led her soul around in a dreamlike state.

"Remember it, I will forever be your third senior brother, but it is only this single identity to you." Nangong Liuyun held Su Luo's hand and pulled it up.

## Chapter 374 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (6)

---

Su Luo wanted to withdraw her hand, but he only gripped hers even more tightly. No matter how much strength she used. in front of him, it was like an ant trying to shake a tree, simply unable to move him in the slightest.

Nangong Liuyun’s eyes, without the least bit of pity, met with the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s pair of wretched eyes. Under his fluid gaze that seemed tranquil, though it hid a hawk-like, sharp, cutting edge, he firmly declared: “Look closely at her. She is Princess Jin, apart from her, there will never be another.”

“Boom——” The Jade Lake’s Fairy only felt her own head exploding, the blood flowing backwards, and waves of dizziness burst from her forehead.

Just a moment ago, they were still good, why was it that in a split second, the situation took such a dramatic turn? In the end, where did the problem come from?

The Jade Lake’s Fairy’s eyes were hazy from tears, lovely and pitiful: “Third senior brother...How could you be like this?”

Li Aotian supported the Jade Lake’s Fairy who was on the verge of collapse, his expression extremely ugly. His cold and detached gaze swept towards Nangong Liuyun.

“Nangong Liuyun, do you still remember your promise to the Jade Lake Palace?”

“Never will I forget it.” Nangong Liuyun’s gaze was sharp and abstruse. His thin, scarlet red lips hooked up apathetically.

“Since you haven’t forgotten, then how dare you treat Yaoyao in this way?” Li Aotian, with unbearable anger, loudly hollered, “Do you know how great was the price Yaoyao paid for you? How can you be this ungrateful, as to kick the teeth of

your benefactor? Has your conscience been eaten by a dog?”

Nangong Liuyun’s rich black eyes were like the quiet sea under white clouds, tranquil and obscure. He unhurriedly and languidly spoke one sentence: “Don’t tell me, you think this king ought to give his heart to repay a kindness?”

“You——” Li Aotian was immediately choked off.

Demanding the arrogant Nangong Liuyun to use this way to repay a kindness, you might as well just kill him off straightforwardly.

Nangong Liuyun indifferently glanced once at the Jade Lake’s Fairy: “Yaoyao, if from now on you will be obedient, then you still will be my, Nangong Liuyun’s, little sister. If on the other hand...”

What was the meaning of ‘if on the other hand’, everyone was crystal clear about it.

“Third senior brother...don’t want...” Two rows of pure tears tumbled from the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s beautiful eyes. She movingly and sadly, gazed fixedly at Nangong Liuyun.

His rejection was just that direct and efficient, simply not giving her any leeway to delude herself.

She didn’t want it!

She had set her mind on him since childhood, all these years, she had continually waited for him to come to marry her. But then, one day, he actually informed her that the person he wanted to marry was not her. She could not accept this, was determined not to accept it!

“Why....Why, just a moment ago, we were still good, and suddenly, it all changed into the circumstances right now? Is it because of second older brother? I can apologize for it. Miss Su, I send my apologies to you. My second older brother was unintentional. He was too furious, thus ended up like this. Will you please forgive us okay...”

Such an arrogant and proud Jade Lake’s Fairy, had now thrown her self-respect to the ground for Nangong Liuyun to trample on. She even admitted to an error and apologized towards Su Luo.

Su Luo was messed up until she was at a loss because of the drastic change.

Nangong Liuyun, this shitty guy, just a moment ago, it still seemed as if he and the Jade Lake's Fairy was in a close relationship where others couldn't step in between them. Now, he had changed into the appearance of clearly setting down the boundary with her. He was really indeed too changeable and fickle, with indeterminate moods that went from overcast to clear!

Nangong Liuyun watched the Jade Lake's Fairy and gave a sigh: "Yaoyao, do you really want to know? Even if this answer may injure you?"

Nangong Liuyun's pair of eyes still had that indifferent smile, the corner of his mouth was still hooked into that nefarious, flattering arc. He had a calm and composed expression. His body gave off a completely-staying-out-of-it manner.

The Jade Lake's Fairy's body trembled from head to toe as she thought about it, finally, she still quietly nodded her head: "Yes, even if I die. I, Li Yaoyao, if I were to die, I want to die with clarity."

Nangong Liuyun was never a master that had tender, protective feelings for the fairer sex. One only saw him slowly start to talk, making people respect him and feel that he was too high to reach.

## Chapter 375 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (7)

---

Nangong Liuyun slowly started to talk: “Very simple, in fact, I just wanted to probe if my family’s Su Luo, this little treasure, would be jealous or not, and that’s all. The result is all thanks to your very brilliantly acted friendly feelings, it was also very useful.”

The Jade Lake’s Fairy was trembling from head to toe, simply tottering on the verge of collapse.

No matter how much she thought, she couldn’t understand just now that Nangong Liuyun’s conduct was actually done to deceive her. He was putting on a play for Su Luo, that slut, to watch, because he just wanted to provoke her to see if she would be jealous or not!

How could it be like this...a few months earlier, he was still treating her intimately close. She was the only girl that could get close to him...the only one.

Could third senior brother just change this fast?

No, it’s not, everything was all because of Su Luo, this little slut! If it was not for her, she also wouldn’t have landed in this kind of deplorable situation. Even more, third senior brother also wouldn’t treat her like this!

The Jade Lake Fairy’s eyes were like spitting out venom ferociously shooting towards Su Luo. That pair of eyes seemed to want to shoot a huge hole through Su Luo.

At this moment, she really wanted to rush up and simply choke the living Su Luo to death!

This little slut’s fate was really good, at that time, she had dispatched so many people to chase her down and kill her, but she still managed to escape. However, in the future, it would be very difficult to say! She, the Jade Lake’s Fairy, vowed

to dismember her body into ten thousand pieces, to resolve the hatred in her heart!

“Third senior brother! Just for this kind of woman, you will discard so many years of our feelings?” The Jade Lake’s Fairy spitefully pointed at Su Luo, her eyes were full of bitter anguish, “You obviously know that she had been discarded by the crown prince before! When did you start to pick up the worn-out shoes (1) that even the crown prince doesn’t want!”

“Smack——” A heavy slap was ruthlessly swung onto the Jade Lake Fairy’s face.

Nangong Liuyun’s pair of eyes seemed to contain icy snow that wouldn’t melt in a millennium. His gaze was unwelcoming, cold and unsympathetic, stressing each syllable as he said: “Do you believe that this king will tear your mouth apart?”

Nobody knew that Nangong Liuyun would suddenly flip out.

Usually, he treated Li Yaoyao well and had always looked upon her like a real, blood-related younger sister. Li Yaoyao only needed that one last step to walk into his heart.

The relationship between them originally was very close, that nobody could compare to it.

The Jade Lake’s princess covered her red and swollen cheek with an inconceivable expression as she stared at Nangong Liuyun. Her body was tottering, muttering to herself: “You hit me...You actually dared to hit me...”

They had known each other for more than ten years, he had gotten furious at a countless number of people and acted violently against them. However, he had always used a soft voice to talk to her. Now, unexpectedly, because of a person he had known for less than a few months, moreover, a good-for-nothing waste of a lowly woman, he hit her!

How could the arrogant and self-important Jade Lake’s Fairy accept this? At this moment, she had nearly gone insane from the pressure she placed on herself.

Li Aotian simply could not watch any more of this.

The Jade Lake Palace's most favored little princess, the treasure that all the elders cupped in the center of their palm, would suffer this kind of bullying and humiliation here. How could he accept it?

“Yaoyao, forget it! Not wanting you is his loss, let us go!”

This slap, he will remember it!

Li Aotian's pair of ice-cold, viper-like eyes swept Su Luo a glance.

This woman, regardless of whether it was intentional or accidental, her existence obstructed Yaoyao and Nangong's camaraderie. Her existence created a creak in Nangong family's and Li family's cooperation. In his role as Li family's child from a direct descendent, he absolutely would not allow this kind of thing to happen.

Therefore, this woman must be killed!

“Second older brother...” The Jade Lake's Fairy was absolutely irreconcilable. She didn't want to leave with her tail between her legs in the stance of a loser.

“Still not going, staying here to make an exhibit of yourself!” Li Aotian rarely shouted loudly and furiously at Li Yaoyao.

*1) Worn-out shoes: in this case, could also be translated as loose woman. Meaning she had already slept with the crown prince. I like Su Luo, so I used the literal translation here.*

## Chapter 376 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (8)

---

This younger sister had always been clever and quick-witted, her innate gift was even more outstanding. Her only failing was her excessive infatuation towards Nangong.

Originally, it was a good thing, and the two families’ elders all looked favorably on this. However, if Nangong had no such intentions towards her, then this would become a huge weakness.

“But...” The Jade Lake’s Fairy was still hesitant, she didn’t want to leave like this. Because leaving like this, would mean that the crack between her and Nangong would be hard to mend.

She firmly believes that third senior brother’s pair of eyes was deceived by that witch. If given time, their relationship would still return to how beautiful it was initially.

Li Aotian merely pulled on the Jade Lake Fairy’s hand, dragging her to walk out with large strides. He loudly bellowed: “Such a respectable, luxurious yacht, we cannot afford to take, even more, we don’t need to take! Still not walking away quickly!”

The Jade Lake’s Fairy was ultimately pulled away by Li Aotian.

Li Aotian carried the Jade Lake’s Fairy and jumped onto the skiff, gradually sailing into the distance.

A split second of quiet appeared on the luxurious yacht.

The occasion seemed a little awkward.

Nangong Liuyun extended his boney finger and flicked Su Luo’s forehead with a sound like the bursting of a chestnut. His smiling expression was devilishly charming and flirtatious: “Foolish girl, just a moment ago, you were so

heartbroken that you were almost sniveling, right? You still dare to say your heart doesn't have this king?"

Su Luo was still immersed in this great play with jubilation and deep grief, now, with one flick from Nangong Liuyun, she rebounded back to reality.

She gave a snorting sound and used all her strength to shake off Nangong Liuyun's hand, turning her face away: "What nonsense are you saying? Who was about to snivel? Who do you think you are."

"Oh, still dare to be hard-mouthed. Just a moment ago who is it that had a weepy, wanting-to-sob little expression, just like a wife being abandoned by her husband."

Nangong Liuyun laughingly tapped the tip of her lovely and charming nose, not very happily giving two 'humph, humph': "Anyway, you, this girl, is also too much. An outside woman had already come and bullied you over your head, but you still silently endured it, allowing other people to bully. Look at you, normally, you often actually bare your fangs and bandish your claws, but at the crucial moment, you faded."

Su Luo slanted him a glance: "Outside woman? How did she get here? Isn't she still drawn in by a certain someone who doesn't take responsibility?"

The cagey, rugged face of Nangong Liuyun clearly had a self-satisfied and proud smile: "Yes, that was an outsider, only this king's Luo girl is an inside person."

"Don't feel like dealing with you." Su Luo turned her head away to look at the scenery, but her mood mysteriously and unfathomably become better.

Not to mention the Jade Lake's Fairy. she was also messed with and caught unprepared by this maneuver of Nangong Liuyun's.

Now, she could calm down her heart and carefully recall all the details. A moment ago, when the Jade Lake's Fairy was strutting around in front of her, her heart was indeed somewhat sour and bitter. Could it be she actually, really... started to like Nangong Liuyun, this bastard?

Su Luo took a furtive look aimed at Nangong Liuyun, and saw that he seemed to have sensed it. His gaze just so happened to meet the look she cast at him.

Su Luo's thoughts became somewhat frantic and hurriedly evaded his gaze, her heart started to beat irregularly and her pulse sped up.

Now, she had a small taste of what that sentence Nangong Liuyun just said.

He said he had allowed the Jade Lake's Fairy to accompany him to perform a play, to make her see and clearly understand the desires in the depths of her heart...

Just when the little person in Su Luo's heart was entangled in an endless dispute, Nangong Liuyun only calmly and smilingly watched her. His eyes shone with a burning, glorious radiance.

Only now did Beichen Ying hammer Nangong Liuyun in the chest, laughing while saying: "This bastard, indeed, you handling matters still exceeds all expectations. This play was also acted very well, if it was not for knowing the inside story, very likely, even I would have been deceived by you. I really thought you and that girl from the Li family had continuous affection for each other."

Beichen Palace and the Jade Lake Palace normally had a complicated relationship.

Don't just look at Beichen Ying's in front of others saying 'Yaoyao younger sister, this Yaoyao younger sister that', if talking about relationships, their interaction was not as close as he and Su Luo's.

## Chapter 377 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (9)

---

Lan Xuan smilingly nodded his head: “Hey, just now, Sister-in-law’s brows wrinkled together seven times, coldly smiled five times, clenched her fist tightly three times....second older brother should give some benefits right?”

Nangong Liuyun took out a piece of crystal stone from his chest pocket and tossed it to Lan Xuan. The corner of his mouth hooked into a shallow smile, his blood red lips were blood-colored: “You did well.”

Lan Xuan smilingly happily caught that piece of cyan-colored crystal stone, and tossed his head slightly and smugly towards Beichen Ying. Beichen Ying threw himself at Lan Xuan, and the two childish fools immediately got tied up fighting into a ball.

When Su Luo heard their dialogue, she couldn’t help but be furious.

Okay, good, so originally these people all knew the truth and she was the only one kept in the dark!

It caused her inner heart to be tangled up for quite a while!

Su Luo furiously glared at Nangong Liuyun once, who would have thought that this bastard would still innocently raise both hands with palms up: “This cannot be blamed on this king. Before, this king had already told you countless times, the position of Princess Jin, only you, one person, can sit in it. Who told you to always disbelieve it?”

Su Luo couldn’t help but scowl: “You make it seem like I really value that position of Princess Jin. Whoever you like to give it to, then give it to them.”

Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan suddenly smiled, and made fists towards Nangong Liuyun, as a way of encouragement: “Second brother, the revolution is still unsuccessful, looks like you still need to try harder.”

Nangong Liuyun indulgently rubbed Su Luo's little head with a somewhat weeping smile.

This girl was still so hard to wait upon, he had already did it to this degree, yet she was still dissatisfied?

In fact, he and Li Yaoyao had grown up together since they were little, as a man, he was not a vegetable, to say he didn't have even a little feeling for her, how could it be possible?

It was only because she and Luo girl could not coexist at the same time, so he had no choice but to make a selection.

Only from now on...Nangong Liuyun's gaze was indecipherable, floating towards the remote and distant sea surface.

From now on, Su girl's safety, he would have to spend more thought on.

While they were talking and laughing, the yacht had already sailed close to the Amethyst Fish Palace. If you lifted your eyes to look, you could clearly see an Amethyst Thorned fish-shaped Palace floating on top of the ocean.

The closer they got, the more they were able to discover that this Amethyst Fish Palace was simply huge beyond imagination.

Su Luo had a hard time estimating the extent of its size.

Just at this time, all of a sudden, from the side, a yacht madly rushed forth at high speed and passed Nangong Liuyun's extravagant and luxurious yacht. It sailed forward at the front with flying speed.

"So obscure!" Lan Xuan came straight out with a cliché.

"That is the crown prince's yacht." Beichen Ying gave a cold snort.

"Could it be...Li Aotian?" Anye Ming half-muttered to himself, and opened his mouth to state this.

"It certainly must be Li Aotian. Li family is usually well-known for this wind system magic, in terms of speed, they always were number one. Capable of surpassing our yacht, only he can do it." Lan Xuan coldly added.

Didn't expect that Li Aotian would be so interesting, originally, they still

believed that the Li family would abandon the treasures in the Amethyst Fish Palace and go home. Who would have known that with a turn of their head, they had joined the crown prince's side.

Anye Ming cast an unnerving glance at Nangong Liuyun, raised an eyebrow and smilingly said: "Don't tell me you don't care a little about Jade Lake Palace turning their head to assist the crown prince? "

Nangong Liuyun's gaze was clear and cold: "You think....he can help the crown prince stand up?"

An indifferent short sentence was infused with Nangong Liuyun's inexhaustible self-confidence.

Beichen Ying laughed while nodding his head: "That's right, not even giving a thought to what Nangong Liujue's conduct is like, the Li family is usually noble and aloof from politics, it will be strange if they considered him."

Su Luo merely silently retreated to the side.

In fact, there was one sentence that the Jade Lake's Fairy had said that was correct. If she hadn't appeared, then Nangong Liuyun and the Li family's relationship would not become this tense.

Nangong Liuyun, with one pull, stopped Su Luo, and in passing, enfolded her into his embrace. With a gorgeous, alluring smile, he said: "Little girl, why are you running?"

"Who is running? I merely thought to get some fresh air, okay." Even at the risk of her life, Su Luo refused to admit the truth.

## Chapter 378 – Jade Lake’s Fairy (10)

---

Nangong Liuyun watched her with his pupils which were like a lake, deep and pitch-black. As intelligent as he was, how could he not know what Su Luo was thinking in her heart?

“Don’t put all the blame on your own body, this conflict had always existed. For every day I don’t marry Li Yaoyao, my and the Li family’s relationship would not be harmonious for another day.” Nangong Liuyun smilingly said.

Actually, the thing he didn’t finish saying was, that the reason why the Jade Lake’s Li family settled on him was because their motive was not that simple.

However, speaking of the crown prince’s side on his luxurious yacht.

The crown prince’s mood right now was hard to describe in words. Just using the old idiom ‘extreme sorrow turns to joy’ was sufficient to summarize everything.

Originally, he lost everything to Su Luo, a debt he owed that couldn’t be paid off in this lifetime. However, he never expected that in the middle of the ocean would unexpectedly emerge the Amethyst Fish Palace that was rarely encountered every one hundred years. This was fine, but he also didn’t expect to still come across people from the Jade Lake’s Li family .

Li Aotian, a grand and stately character at the peak of sixth rank.

Li Yaochi, known as the Jade Lake’s Fairy, Eastern Ling country’s number one beauty, talented and good-looking. At such a young age, her innate gift and martial arts had already reached the fifth rank. Her future prospects absolutely would be unlimited and could not be measured.

But these two individuals actually boarded his yacht, in addition, they also promised to give him a helping hand after entering the Amethyst Fish Palace.

“Aren’t you guys partners of Nangong Liuyun? Why did you come to help me?” The crown prince had some misgivings, he really didn’t understand this.

Once Li Aotian heard Nangong Liuyun, these four words, immediately, his complexion became ashen, with both hands clenched tightly into fists. He was obviously furious to the extreme.

The Jade Lake Fairy’s pair of red, swollen eyes were filled with glistening teardrops, seeing it made one pity her and made people who saw this heartbroken. More than half of the crown prince’s soul was stolen away, his heart felt extreme tenderness and pity towards the Jade Lake’s Fairy.

But in the Jade Lake Fairy’s eyes flashed vicious rays of light, stressing every syllable, she said: “Nangong Liujue, do you want to ascend the throne to become emperor?”

“Eh?” The crown prince was immediately scared that he jumped up, this kind of unfilial, rebellious words, when the Jade Lake’s Fairy said it, it seemed really smooth, completely lacking any apprehension.

Without the slightest hesitation, he ordered the servants to retire, then the crown prince covertly asked: “What did you say?”

“Nangong Liujue, if you want to become emperor, our Jade Lake’s Li family could help you. But you must promise me one thing.” The Jade Lake Fairy’s eyes were like a viper, giving off a sinister radiance.

Coming into contact with the Jade Lake Fairy’s gaze, the crown prince’s heart suddenly jumped from fright. How was it that the charming and gentle illusion, in a split second, vanished so completely.

This was a powerful, domineering woman, her inner heart was definitely not as weak as her outer appearance.

The crown prince firmly said: “You say it.”

“Go chase back Su Luo, that little slut.” The Jade Lake Fairy’s voice was dark and cold as she said: “When you have stolen her back from within Nangong Liuyun’s hands, that’s when our Jade Lake’s Li family will take action to assist you!”

The crown prince was also not a fool, all at once, he understood the critical point of this matter.

He said it all along, Li Aotian and the Jade Lake's Fairy seemed fine, why didn't they go to Nangong Liuyun's yacht, but rather, come aboard on his yacht. So, it turned out to be because of Su Luo, looked like this loathsome girl was not forever going to be more of a hindrance than help to him.

Able to see Nangong Liuyun and Li family, who he need to be wary of, have a falling out. The happiest about this was none other than the crown prince.

However, the issue put forth by the Jade Lake's Fairy, this matter, would make things difficult for him.

“Su Luo, that loathsome girl, is in Nangong Liuyun's hand. You also saw how he treasures that loathsome girl, wanting to steal her back, very difficult.” The crown prince shook his head.

Originally, he also thought that Nangong Liuyun would marry the Jade Lake Palace's, this little princess. However, he didn't expect, from the side, thrust out Su Luo who unexpectedly stole away all of Nangong Liuyun's soul.

# Chapter 379 – Amethyst Fish Palace (1)

---

In the wake of that girl constantly demonstrating her extraordinary talent, the crown prince also had to admit that before, his vision was not good, letting go of such a hen that could lay golden eggs.

Recalling that he owed her one thousand, five hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones, immediately, the crown prince's face sank to the point that water could drip out.

The Jade Lake's Fairy frowned, with some displeasure, she snorted out: "Isn't she just a good-for-nothing waste? Why are you still hesitant?"

A good-for-nothing waste?

The crown prince suddenly looked at the Jade Lake's Fairy with a speechless expression.

That girl's reputation was not good, the label of a good-for-nothing waste was stuck to her body for more than ten years. Also, because of this, in order to get rid of this burden, he had employed a stratagem to break off the engagement, but was the truth really like this?

She could treat Su Qing, who was praised as the new generation's gifted genius, as a rival, then setting up a life and death duel with her.

She could hook so many Amethyst Thorned fishes under thousands of pairs of staring eyes, and strike him until he was too ashamed to show his face.

This kind of her, was still that good-for-nothing from that time? Basically, this was completely a different person, alright?

The crown prince slowly shook his head, stressing each word, saying: "Jade Lake's Fairy, I'm afraid your information is somewhat behind. Could it be you don't know that now, Su Luo is already at the third rank in strength?"

In her age group, having this kind of cultivation, even if it was not regarded as a genius, it was still considered outstanding.

Sure enough, the Jade Lake's Fairy frowned, saying in displeasure: "What? She...actually is a third rank? No wonder..."

No wonder that the several maids she sent, each and every one of them never came back. In all likelihood, they were all killed by her!

So, it turned out that Su Luo, for so many years past, was concealing her strength and biding her time. In front of people, she was considered a good-for-nothing. No wonder she was able to seduce third senior brother until he was infatuated, head over heels in love. She was really a character.

However, merely a third rank.....He he, also merely a third rank and nothing more.

"Not only that but..." The crown prince let out a faint sigh, "Jade Lake's Fairy, there is something you are not aware of, don't know what secret is on this loathsome girl's body, today, her talents shined and seized everyone's eyes.

"What do you mean?" The Jade Lake's Fairy frowned.

"As expected, the Jade Lake's Fairy does not know. Alas, do you know who hooked the most Amethyst Thorned fishes today?" The crown prince's expression was somewhat despondent. This was the deepest pain in his heart.

"Don't tell me it wasn't third senior brother?" The Jade Lake's Fairy asked, somewhat astonished.

In previous years, the one who hooked the most fish was undeniably third senior brother, there was simply no need for doubt.

"Not him." The crown prince replied simply.

"Then who?"

"A person you will never guess, no matter how many tries." The crown prince's expression was very complicated.

"Don't tell me, that person is...Su Luo?" The Jade Lake's Fairy uttered in surprise. Afterwards, her mouth hooked into a sneer, and felt that her own notion was simply too absurd.

How could it be her? Even if her cultivation now was at the third rank, among this group of people, that was at the very bottom. How could she even hook one fish? Even if she could hook one or two fishes, then her luck was already considered pretty good.

But the crown prince's words thoroughly smashed her daydream.

“You guessed right, today, the person that hooked the most Amethyst Thorned fish, is not a stranger, but is precisely that loathsome girl!” Whenever the crown prince spoke of this, he would fume with rage between gritted teeth. He wished that time would flow backwards, returning him to before he made the bet with her.

If it was only this loathsome girl betting with him, then forget it, as it happened, Beichen and those people also all took part in it, making him unable to breach the contract like he wanted to.

“What did you say?!” The Jade Lake's Fairy, who originally sat on the chair made out of red sandalwood, stood up in a flash. Her pair of eyes were brimming with a burning radiance. She grabbed the crown prince's collar, looking malevolent and vengeful: “I order you to say it again!”

## Chapter 380 – Amethyst Fish Palace (2)

---

The crown prince's entire body was almost lifted up by the Jade Lake's Fairy. Faced with that pair of very severe and sinister eyes, the crown prince only felt his heart immediately become cold.

Undoubtedly, she was as beautiful as a fairy, but why did she give him the feeling of having cold sweat on his back? No matter how much the crown prince thought about it, he couldn't understand.

“Quickly tell me!” How could the Jade Lake's Fairy now still be that pure, cold, aloof and proud-as-if-above-the-common-people, that woman? The her right now was a malicious, sinister witch of a woman.

The crown prince restrained the chill in his heart, gave a cold snort and deliberately tried to shock the Jade Lake's Fairy: “What's the harm in letting you know. Today's fishing champion is precisely that loathsome girl. Don't believe me, you can go and ask around. It was under thousands of pairs of staring eyes, who could tell a lie?”

“That is impossible! Only if third senior brother gave some of the ones he hooked to her!” How could the Jade Lake's Fairy believe it?

“Humph! This king also wishes this is not true, but under thousands of pairs of staring eyes, all present saw this clearly. That loathsome girl simply and neatly caught one thousand five hundred Amethyst Thorned fish!” The crown prince shook off Jade Lake Fairy's hand, and said it while panting with rage.

This matter, he originally didn't want to mention it again, however, it was to no avail since the Jade Lake's Fairy kept asking.

“One thousand five hundred....Amethyst Thorned fishes? Are you certain it isn't the common kind of fish?” At this moment, it was not only the Jade Lake's Fairy, even Li Aotian was surprised. His pair of eyes was like electricity, staring

fixedly at the crown prince.

The Jade Lake's Fairy had an even more stunned expression as she stared at the crown prince. It was as if she was looking for signs that he was lying on his face.

But the crown prince starkly spread out both of his hands: "If you guys don't believe me, go out and randomly grab anyone to ask, and everything will be clear. In any case, the matter today, everyone saw it clearly."

Not waiting for the Jade Lake's Fairy to act, Li Aotian had already flown out, and in a blink of an eye, he came back with a few people he had grabbed.

After interrogating them one after another, he was amazed to discover that every sentence the crown prince said was true. Moreover, the most pathetic thing was that this crown prince also actually lost one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones to that little slut.

The Jade Lake's Fairy was simply dumbfounded, besides being shocked, in addition to jealousy, she also felt humiliated.

Now, recalling that matter that happened a moment ago on that yacht, a scarlet color flashed across her face.

Now, she finally understood why just now, on third senior brother's yacht, when she mentioned hooking Amethyst Thorned fish, those few people's expression would be so surprised.

She had really underestimated that little slut, no, not merely underestimating her, she had greatly underestimated her.

However, one thousand five hundred Amethyst Thorned fish....in the end, how had she accomplished it? Could it be that on her body, she had an unknown secret?

Even if the Jade Lake's Fairy pondered until her brain became stupid, she would still fail to think that the common Su Luo was actually a space system mage. Moreover, she still had the little divine dragon to remind her to mix some Celestial Spirit Water into the fish food.

Time slowly passed, now, the yacht had already arrived in front of the

Amethyst Fish Palace.

Li Aotian patted her slender shoulder, his voice was deep and low: “Don’t let your imagination run wild. Find an opportunity to grab that girl over here and interrogate her, then we’ll know. If I didn’t guess wrong, that girl ought to have hidden secrets on her body.”

Li Aotian never considered if the other party would cooperate with the questions from his interrogation. This was because he had hundreds and thousands of methods that would make the other party obediently tell the truth.

A group of people walked quickly out of the yacht on foot.

The imposing and vast Amethyst Fish Palace that had no end at a glance, now stood before everyone’s eyes.

Li Aotian stepped off the yacht and directly rushed towards the Amethyst Fish Palace. This was due to the reason that the earlier you entered the Amethyst Fish Palace, implied that your chances would be greater. But, he was forced to stop his footsteps in front of the palace gates.

The doors to the Amethyst Fish Palace did not directly open wide, that glowing, vermilion red-colored palace gates was tightly shut.

## Chapter 381 – Amethyst Fish Palace (3)

---

Li Aotian let out a cold humph, and stamped his feet after concentrating strength into his soles. He drew the huge, double-edged sword he carried on his back. That sword, like a cold streak, flashed past with a threatening chill.

One could only see Li Aotian lifting that huge sword up high and brandishing it towards that solid palace gate and chopping down!

A burst of violent force rippled through the air, and it seemed as if the ground was vibrating. However, that seemingly thin palace gate didn't even move an inch. On the gate, not a trace of it having been chopped could be seen.

How could it be like this? He was a sixth rank expert oh! This was impossible!

Li Aotian did not believe it was possible. Once more, he concentrated all his spirit power and poured it completely into that huge sword. The tip of the sword shot out an explosive force—

One could only hear 'swoosh, swoosh, swoosh', the ear-splitting sounds of the atmosphere being fractured.

This single chop was unsurpassingly vigorous and deft.

However, when this sword chopped down, the vermilion red-colored panels of the hinged gate seemed to be emitting a faint radiance. It seemed like a skin-like coating was wrapped entirely around its body as a protective layer. Not only was there no trace of any difference to the gate, on the contrary, Li Aotian's huge sword was heavily ricocheted back.

If it weren't for Li Aotian's speedy reaction and promptly grabbing hold of the handle of that huge sword, then this time, he would have lost a lot of face.

"This hinged gate was sealed by an expert." Li Aotian, with extreme anger, bellowed out loudly.

The crown prince's expression immediately became somewhat malicious.

Their yacht had tightly sailed forward and slowly overtook everyone to be first, just so they could reach the Amethyst Fish Palace a step ahead of everyone else. It was in order to be the earliest to enter the Amethyst Fish Palace.

Countless people from the older generation left behind directions saying that for the earliest ones to enter, their odds of obtaining treasures would be that much greater. But no one ever said that to enter the Amethyst Fish Palace, you still needed to open the seal on the gate.

But now, with this delay, Nangong Liuyun's yacht, in the blink of an eye, had arrived.

Beichen Ying was the first to jump out of the yacht.

Beichen Ying took it upon himself to constantly strike at the crown prince, smiling happily, he said to Lan Xuan: "Oh, I was under the impression that some had already gone inside the palace earlier. I didn't expect that instead, so many people would enthusiastically stand in front of the gate to wait for us."

Lan Xuan raised an eyebrow and smilingly said: "Idiot, do you really believe they are standing in formation to welcome us? They are wishing that we could disappear at once for good. Of course, it is because they couldn't enter. If they could go in, they would have already run in until we couldn't even find their shadows."

The crown prince's complexion was ashen as he slanted a glance at Lan Xuan.

This despicable fellow again emulated Beichen Ying's inclinations, all of his words were very poisonous.

The corner of Lan Xuan's mouth hooked into a shallow smile, and his chin was tilted up as he slanted a glance at the crown prince. That posture exhibited the air of a young master from an influential aristocratic family, and as an elder brother, it was one hundred percent emphatic.

Li Aotian's tries were no good, adding in the Jade Lake's Fairy was also no good. Finally, they added the group of people the crown prince brought, and as before, it was still no good.

The crown prince became somewhat anxious.

This was owing to the fact that the amount of time the Amethyst Fish Temple stayed was limited.

Every one hundred years, it would appear once. Every time it appeared, it would stop over for one day. Therefore, every minute and every second was precious.

Whenever the crown prince thought of that pile upon piles of treasures that he had no chance of obtaining, it was like his heart was crying blood.

Ever since Nangong Liuyun appeared, afterwards, the Jade Lake Fairy's gaze would unblinkingly stare at him with beautiful, luminous eyes.

Since young to adult, she had liked him for so many years, how could she give up just because of one sentence of rejection from Nangong?

Even more so because although Li Yaoyao's outward appearance was extremely delicate, her heart was strong and unwaveringly determined, such that many men could not hold a candle to her resoluteness.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun so naturally holding Su Luo's hand as he slowly walked over, the Jade Lake's Fairy sucked in a deep breath. She calmed down her heart and state of mind, her face blossoming with a light and pure smiling expression: "Third senior brother, since everybody all came because of this Amethyst Fish Palace, why not open this seal together?"

Nangong Liuyun originally ignored her, until Su Luo bumped his arm, only then did he indifferently cast a glance at the Jade Lake's Fairy. He noncommittally raised an eyebrow.

## Chapter 382 – Amethyst Fish Palace (4)

---

The Jade Lake Fairy's appearance stiffened for a split second, but she still maintained that arc at the corner of her mouth. Her smile was as gorgeous as a flower, as if the unpleasantness on the yacht from before never happened.

“Could third senior brother still be taking offense at Yaoyao's lack of manners from before? If that is so, then Yaoyao fairy will apologize to Miss Su.” The corner of the Jade Lake Fairy's mouth contained a shallow, indifferent smile, with a composed expression on her face.

It seemed as if she was still that extraordinary and refined Jade Lake's Fairy, and he was still that third senior brother who pampered and spoiled her.

Nangong Liuyun gave a smile that was not quite one as he cast her a glance, but he did not speak.

Su Luo saw this, and a trace of precaution flitted across her heart.

If the Jade Lake's Fairy was still pretending to be that lovely, pitiful, delicate white lotus flower from before, then she would be easy to deal with.

However, she could calm her mood within such a short amount of time, giving a tranquil and calm appearance without a ripple, as if nothing had happened. It was just like the first time when Su Luo saw her, so extraordinary, refined and above-the-common-people, that Jade Lake's Fairy.

This kind of forbearance, this kind of shrewdness, really made people afraid of the consequences.

Recalling before on the yacht, able to upset her until she exposed her real nature, it could clearly be seen how seriously upsetting those words by Nangong Liuyun were to her. However, from now on, if Su Luo wanted to see the appearance of her losing control, then it certainly would be difficult.

The crown prince clenched his teeth, he squeezed out a trace of a smile from the corner of his stiff lips, and said to Nangong Liuyun: “Second younger brother, looking at the time passing in seconds and minutes, don’t tell me you are not anxious? Wouldn’t it be better if we all work as one to open this seal together?”

Nangong Liuyun indifferently cast a glance at the crown prince, lowered his gaze and in an indulgent and spoiling manner, rubbed Su Luo’s hair: “This king’s Luo girl has the final say.”

Immediately, the crown prince’s expression hardened.

The Jade Lake Fairy’s expression, for only a split second, was simply, extremely ugly. She grinded her teeth before her face perked up into an unperturbed, smiling expression as if nothing happened, and said: “Miss Su, behind us, there are so many people watching impatiently, you wouldn’t let everyone be disappointed, right?”

Su Luo glanced back for a look, sure enough, she saw a large group of densely crowded people. Following the Jade Lake Fairy’s words, they violently nodded their heads towards her.

Their movements were so in sync as if they were one, very much identical, as if she was blocking their path. It was as if she was a heinous, great sinner.

Su Luo rolled her eyes at Nangong Liuyun in disgruntlement. “Who wants me to be the villain in your place? Wishful thinking! I order you to get out of my way.”

Once these words were out, everyone present immediately sucked in a cold breath of air.

This was merely ordinary dialogue in Su Luo’s eyes, but looking at everyone’s eyes, this was completely not like that. No, they were like all the people in Su Manor on that day, their hearts were trembling at least three times, having been shaken by Su Luo’s remarks.

His Highness Prince Jin was what kind of savage and bloodthirsty person? Able to make him indulge her to this degree, speaking based on reason, that Miss being loved so much ought to burn incense and worship Buddha in thanks, right?

However, this Miss she actually still had a scolding tone, not only that, she also

had an unhappy appearance!

Who did she think she was!

But she was confronting Prince Jin, the temperamental, with his moods indeterminately going from overcast to clear, savage and ruthless, that His Highness Prince Jin. She was simply courting death!

Now, practically everyone was regretfully looking at Su Luo, because in their eyes, how could His Highness Prince Jin not get angry?

Even the Jade Lake's Fairy, who had always been familiar with Nangong Liuyun, now, that pair of quick-witted, beautiful eyes had a burning radiance, similar to the rainbow-colored sunlight. It was brimming with expectation, hope, happiness, and rejoicing-in-other-people's-misfortune kind of expression while looking at Su Luo....

In her eyes, Nangong Liuyun's temperament had always been bad, and what he hated the most was disobedience and refusal.

However, what made everyone be taken aback, and also made the Jade Lake's Fairy bite her gums until they tore into pieces, was that the scene that their eyes had expected completely did not take place.

On the contrary, Nangong Liuyun moved in closer still, more intimately smiling at her, in a fawning manner as if trying to win her favor.

## Chapter 383 – Amethyst Fish Palace (5)

---

Nangong Liuyun gave a devilishly charming smile: “How could this king be willing to let you act as a villain? Okay okay, this king will put forth the effort, and all the credit will be assigned to you.”

Heavens, heavens, God——

Was this man really His Highness Prince Jin? That legendary, rumored to be bloodthirsty, cruel and excessively ruthless, a commander who directly cut off the arms of a Princess without blinking an eye, that His Highness Prince Jin? This was simply too uncharacteristic of him.

Jade Lake’s Fairy was even more furious, to the point she had bitten her lip until it bled. Her hands were clenched tightly into fists, the veins hidden within the sleeves of her garment had burst out and were bulging, continuously trembling.

Under countless gazes, Su Luo knew when to stop: “This way is actually pretty good, you should go quickly.”

Saying this, she directly pushed Nangong Liuyun to the front of the wooden hinged gate, her movement seemed as though she was quite familiar with him.

This action again raised endless exclamations of alarmed surprise from everyone.

An average person who would dare turn his back to others? Let alone when it comes to an expert, like His Highness Prince Jin? An ordinary person simply couldn’t even get close to his back, alright?

But not only was Su Luo able to do it, she also did it with extreme familiarity, it was clear to see how much His Highness Prince Jin trusted her!

Ignoring all the shocked gazes in her surroundings, Su Luo indifferently stood

at the side, watching Nangong Liuyun with an expression that was calm and unruffled despite being in the midst of chaos.

Beichen Ying had both his hands at his waist, sizing up this imposing building, looking at it up and down. He couldn't help but lament: "Everyone said the Amethyst Fish Palace was grand and majestic, today at last, I'm finally able to see it, as expected it lives up to its reputation."

Lan Xuan kicked him with his foot: "Don't waste unnecessary words, hurry over to help open the seal."

Nangong Liuyun swept them with a faint glance, and firmly lifted his hands: "No need."

Could it be that His Highness Prince Jin wanted to open the seal with only his own strength? This was not possible right? Just now, when all of those people had gathered together their strength, that gate didn't even move a single jot.

Nangong Liuyun quietly sized up that gate, carefully observing, his figure seemed to have stood there for long time, as if since the ancient times, his back was lean and peaceful. His body seemed to have a faint layer of radiance.

The surroundings were very quiet, everyone was stupidly watching His Highness Prince Jin. None of them understood why he was standing there completely motionless.

Approximately one hour later, the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth suddenly raised into an evidently smiling expression. He raised the sleeve of his garment carelessly, and directly in front of him, a rapidly rotating circular halo took form. Within this diagram, it seemed to contain inexhaustible spiritual power.

"Go!" Nangong Liuyun burst out loudly. That circular halo then gushed forth towards the palace gate in a manner akin to the raging waves in a stormy sea, with a vastly imposing manner, an unstoppable force.

"Bang!"

When the circular halo ploughed into the palace gate, it issued the sound of a heavy hit. The air sent 'zing, zing' noises, this part of the world seemed to rock violently.

“The seal is about to be broken...” The face of everyone’s deathly pale complexions was reflected in the light of the circular halo.

The curtain of light enveloping the palace gate that originally obstructed everyone from entering, was currently cracking open with a speed visible to the naked eye, gradually turning into nothingness.

All the people in the surrounding area had retreated far away, for fear that the powerful waves of spirit power would affect them.

However, their facial expressions right now were shocked to the extent of incredulous disbelief.

Such a formidable strength, such a fierce wave of spiritual force!

In addition, what was even rarer was that His Highness Prince Jin’s full use of his spirit power, had in the end, practically reached the level of perfection. It simply made people admire him to the point of prostrating themselves in adoration.

People able to come to the Amethyst Thorned Island could not be ordinary. They had more or less already seen other seven rank experts, but they simply hadn’t seen anyone as formidably powerful as His Highness Prince Jin.

Jade Lake’s Fairy was foolishly gazing at Nangong Liuyun with deep love, her pair of beautiful eyes was glittering with such worship that she nearly become an imbecile.

His seven rank strength was nearly negligible in difference with her father, who was at the eighth rank. If they fought with each other, the outcome was simply too hard to guess.

## Chapter 384 – Amethyst Fish Palace (6)

---

At such an age, possessing this kind of strength... Jade Lake Fairy's eyes narrowed slightly, both of her fists were clenched.

This kind of man, how could she so easily give him up? No, even if she died, she would also never abandon her love for him. She would do everything to obstruct other women—

Jade Lake's Fairy quietly swept a glance at Su Luo, a trace of ice-cold killing intent flashed through her beautiful eyes!

A single loud 'bang' sound could be heard. The seal on the palace gate that the combined power of the crown prince's group couldn't even shake a fraction, was nevertheless opened solely by Nangong Liuyun's strength.

Under this contrast, a conclusion had been drawn about both sides' strength.

The crown prince's expression was somewhat stiff. Seeing the Amethyst Fish Palace's gates slowly opening, he surreptitiously sent a meaningful glance to Li Aotian. Li Aotian paused a little, then faintly nodded his head.

Not waiting for Nangong Liuyun to collect himself, the crown prince condensed all his spirit strength into both of his legs. His body was like an out-of-control wild horse, as he abruptly rushed towards the inside of the palace.

Li Aotian was also like that, but he still pulled at the Jade Lake's Fairy, and in passing, easily led her inside.

"Bastards!" Beichen Ying cursed darkly, "What kind of people are these! They were unable to open the seal themselves, fine. They ask Nangong, who opened it, yet they slipped away so quickly like this."

Anye Ming swept him a look: "Don't just waste words, we should also hurry and enter. If we're late, and that Amethyst Crystal Fish were to be found by

them, it would not be so wonderful.”

Lan Xuan promptly nodded: “Other treasures, we couldn’t care less, but we must get our hands on that Amethyst Crystal Fish!”

“Whoosh—”

“Whoosh—”

“Whoosh—”

The three people’s shadows passed rapidly, flying towards the inside of the palace. However, very quickly, they felt something was off. They turned their heads and found that Nangong and Su Luo was actually missing.

“What’s going on?” Beichen Ying was so worried that he shouted towards the surging tide of people.

At this time, the violent surging stream of people were constantly trying to squeeze inside. Each and every one had bloodshot eyes as they charged ahead, fearing that if they were late, the treasures would be taken away by someone. That cruel struggle of risking one’s life in a race against time was a scene that was simply indescribable using words.

With great difficulty, they waited until the crushing crowd all together rushed past, and Beichen Ying’s trio finally saw the couple arriving slowly.

Beichen Ying was so anxious that smoke was about to come out, and he urgently shouted: “My great His Highness Prince Jin, how could you still be so leisurely, calm and collected? Any later and the Amethyst Crystal Fish will be gone!”

Because of what Amethyst Crystal Fish? Why was everyone fighting to obtain it?

It was said that every time the Amethyst Fish Palace appeared, there will be a treasured Amethyst fish inside.

This treasured Amethyst fish did not have any other skills besides spitting out crystal stones.

Just like the manner of a silkworm spitting out silk and a hen laying eggs, this Amethyst fish could spit out crystal stones. Moreover, it was not only once a

day, but it spits out according to the three meals timetable, so three pieces a day. If you obtained this Amethyst Crystal Fish, then in the future, you wouldn't need to worry about crystal stones.

Furthermore, there were no rules to the crystal stones it disgorged, it was said that it depended completely on luck and a person's character. If the character was bursting with greatness, then spitting out a purple crystal stone was also possible!

And also, this Amethyst fish's lifespan was only one hundred years. Until the next time the Amethyst Fish Palace opened, the former Amethyst fish would have accomplished its glorious task and retired from use.

Since it was like this, the Amethyst fish was still the main target that all the influential parties wanted control of.

Su Luo could understand Beichen Ying's edginess.

However, Nangong Liuyun did not seem to be in the least bit of hurry. He raised an eyebrow slightly with a calm and composed manner, and dismissed Beichen Ying with just four words: "You guys go first."

"What about you?" Beichen Ying asked in a loud voice.

"Don't tell me that the three of you are still no match for those few useless people?" Nangong Liuyun smiled devilishly, raising an eyebrow while watching Beichen Ying and them.

## Chapter 385 – Amethyst Fish Palace (7)

---

Biechen Ying looked at Su Luo, so furious that he was about to say something, but was glared down by Nangong Liuyun.

Finally, Beichen Ying merely flung his sleeves in a manner of ‘since the jar was already broken, might as well throw it’: “Fine, do as you please! I hope that this time, the Amethyst fish will be taken away by Li Yaoyao and company, to infuriate you guys to death.”

Nangong Liuyun had a smile on his face as he looked at Su Luo but did not speak.

Beichen Ying’s group of three swept Su Luo one final glance and glared severely at Nangong Liuyun with an being angry having no other alternative appearance. Finally the launched into full speed like a shooting star and disappeared from in front of them.

Su Luo glanced at Nangong Liuyun, frowned and said: “In fact you needn’t be like this, I don’t need you to keep me company.”

Even if Beichen Ying and them didn’t openly say it, however, Su Luo could also roughly guess at why Nangong Liuyun didn’t immediately follow after them to rapidly move forward together.

It was because those individuals’ speed, she was unable to keep up with.

As a result, he would rather miss the chance at a treasure and still insist on keeping her company by her side as they slowly strolled on. They were as leisurely as if strolling through their own backyard garden. And with regards to that Amethyst Crystal Fish, he basically let things slide.

Nangong Liuyun’s beautiful eyes were as deep as a pool containing a secretive, shallow smile as he lightly kissed her forehead: “This king hasn’t said it, you

actually perceived everything, really, it's like your heart is linked to this king's. You tell me, in this lifetime, besides this king, who else can you marry?"

Su Luo couldn't help but to hold her forehead and gasp.

This guy, no matter what topic, how could he always turn it back into pressing her to marry him? As if he had the intention of only marrying her and no other?

Only heard of other men hating to get married, but never heard of a woman hating being asked to be married.

Su Luo tried very hard to return the conversation back to the topic again: "Don't tell me you are not worried? That Amethyst Crystal Fish sounds like it would be quite amazing, if you obtain it, in the future, your strength will absolutely rise up a huge step."

"No matter how good the Amethyst fish is, how could it be compared to you?" Nangong Liuyun gestured with his hand, not minding it in the least. His beautiful dark eyes contained a roguish, alluring smiling expression: "You must be very moved by this king's deed. Are you moved to the extent that you will give your heart to me?"

Nangong Liuyun's whole body was suffused with a faint luster. One tall and one short, the two figures stood just like this. Nangong Liuyun's tall and straight body set off Su Luo to look even more dainty and beautiful.

The distance between the two was very close, Su Luo could clearly smell the great smelling, masculine fragrance on his body. That kind of strong, and quite pure fragrance, was like an intoxicating fog.

Su Luo felt that her heart was beating somewhat strongly and unconsciously turned her face away.

Nangong Liuyun loved to death her shy little appearance. He didn't lay her bare, that pair of deep, dark, beautiful eyes were smiling, quietly looking at her.

Su Luo gave a clear cough, paused a little, and again with great difficulty, tried to carry things back to the proper subject: "You really won't regret it? Later, you are not allowed to say it was because of me that caused you not to get the Amethyst fish, then force me to marry you in compensation!"

Su Luo had no choice but to plan ahead, because this guy really could do this kind of thing!

A crafty expression flashed through Nangong Liuyun's eyes, but his face had an appearance of sighing helplessly: "You actually guessed it, how could this be good?"

Because of this Su Luo, was angrily tied in a knot, she furiously glared at Nangong Liuyun.

But Nangong Liuyun only smilingly pinched her nose: "Okay, okay, not going to continue teasing you for fun. But Luo girl, could it be that you still haven't discovered what is your strongest point?"

Su Luo thought for a while, but alone, she could not think of an idea. She couldn't help asking suspiciously: "What is it?"

Seeing this girl in front of his eyes, with her beautiful, confused, captivating eyes opened wide, a soft, spoiling and indulging mood appeared in Nangong Liuyun's heart. He smilingly pulled her along by the hand, walking unhurriedly. He spoke one word while walking: "Luck."

## Chapter 386 – Amethyst Fish Palace (8)

---

“What?” Su Luo was momentarily unable to react.

“Your strongest point is luck, don’t tell me that even now, you still haven’t realized it?” Nangong Liuyun smilingly looked at her. “If you don’t believe me, you count it yourself. Your luck in the end is so good to the extent of defying the natural order of things.”

If Nangong Liuyun didn’t say it, then it was fine, but since he said it this way, the words seemed to resonate a little with Su Luo’s heart.

Since the beginning when she crossed over after swallowing the Dragon’s Ring, until the innate talent test later. Then, again, time after time of fortuitous encounters upon arriving at the Sunset Mountain Range. Even hooking Amethyst Thorned fishes from just before, was also this way. With all these kinds of coincidences, after she carefully thought about, among these events, her luck really played a huge part.

But what about having luck, luck was also a part of strength.

Su Luo’s eyes were bright, with a proud-of-oneself expression, she lifted her chin: “Who asked my character to be so good, this kind of thing is something envy could not get you. You just stand at the side and be jealous of me.”

Nangong Liuyun’s beautiful eyes were charming and gentle, he gave a devilishly charming smile: “It is indeed something envy won’t bring over, however. isn’t that why this king is accompanying you on this stroll? Maybe when this girl is walking, you might even kick upon an Amethyst Crystal Fish on the roadside.”

Naturally, this was impossible for other people, but Su Luo... It was really hard to say with this girl’s luck.

Su Luo was just about to tease him with a sentence, when all of a sudden, her footsteps stopped.

Afterwards, she had a complicated expression as she looked at Nangong Liuyun, for a moment, her eyes had a strange look.

“What happened?” Seeing her come to a stop, Nangong Liuyun had no choice but to also stop.

A white light appeared in Su Luo’s hand, a snowy, jade-colored, adorable little divine dragon appeared in Su Luo’s arms. Not waiting for Su Luo to act, with the speed of flight, he immediately dashed towards the original road they came from.

Nangong Liuyun suspiciously cast Su Luo a glance.

Su Luo gave a ‘hey, hey’ smile, she really didn’t know what would be good to say.

She pulled at Nangong Liuyun and with quick steps, followed behind the little divine dragon. While on one hand running to chase after him, and on the other hand, explaining everything to him: “This little thing...Is a special tool dedicated to hunting treasure, following after him definitely won’t be wrong.”

The little divine dragon had risen naturally because he found some treasure.

Obviously, Nangong Liuyun had seen the little divine dragon before, but he didn’t know that the little divine dragon could be used to hunt treasure.

Now, inside the main hall of this palace, it was absolutely empty. Besides Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo, the pair of them, everyone else had all without exception, tried to outdo each other and rushed inside.

The little divine dragon didn’t pause much inside the main hall. His petite clever body was as nimble as a tanuki (1), following the passage and directly hurriedly skimmed along towards the outside.

Although Nangong Liuyun somewhat didn’t believe in this little puppy’s ability to seek out treasure, since Su Luo liked it, he would accompany her together in this nonsense. As long as he was by her side, no matter what she does, he would be happy.

The little divine dragon's galloping speed lasted for about the period of one stick of incense. When Su Luo and him stood still, Su Luo became somewhat speechless.

The place that the little divine dragon stopped at was really...this place was actually the doorway to the main hall, just a moment ago, almost everyone was standing here like a dense black mass. Everyone was standing here discussing how to unseal the gate to go inside.

Could it be that beneath here, there was really hidden some treasure? If it was really like this, then very likely, everyone who found out would regret it until their intestines were green, right?

One could only see the little divine dragon extend his two front paws and continuously dig at the surface of the ground.

His little paws were as sharp as a pointed knife, it was sharper compared to most weapons.

Nangong Liuyun had a strange expression as he looked at the puppy digging at the ground, the corner of his mouth pursed slightly.

The surface of this ground, every brick was made from an abnormally hard Cold Arcane Stone, but under the paws of this little guy, it was no different than soil. One paw dug down, a brick was sent flying, and this repeated in a non-stop loop.

Suddenly, the light in Nangong Liuyun's eyes changed directions, from within the hole that was dug, he felt an intensely strong fluctuations of spirit force.

*1) tanuki : otherwise known as the raccoon dog indigenous to East Asia.*

## Chapter 387 – Amethyst Fish Palace (9)

---

Don't tell me there really was a treasure here?

Nangong Liuyun's line of sight gazed towards that black hole.

He observed that the black hole was awfully small in diameter, and would only allow the little divine dragon to pass. Other people could only extend at most two hands in it.

One could only see the little divine dragon's body curl up and then leap down. When he reappeared again, his mouth was holding a small, exquisite, red sandalwood box. As if taking credit for an achievement, he delivered it to Su Luo.

Afterwards, his little tail was pointed up high, and his limpid, monochrome, clear, big eyes looked at Su Luo. He seemed to have an adorable expression, as if seeking praise.

Su Luo rubbed his head and scratched under his chin, immediately, the little divine dragon was extremely happy. He excitedly thrust himself into Su Luo's embrace, with his little paws holding onto her lapel, unwilling to let go.

Awoo, awoo, awoo— for quite a while, he hadn't come out to take a breath of fresh air. All along, he had been shut inside by Master to swallow crystal stones and cultivate. Now that he had done a meritorious deed, Master wouldn't continue to shut him in that little darkroom, right.

At this moment, Su Luo's entire attention had fallen onto that small box.

She wanted to open the box, but discovered that she couldn't open it at all. It was just like that hinged gate, as if it was sealed by someone else.

Not only wasn't Su Luo depressed, on the contrary, she was even happier.

Things that could be branded with a seal by an expert, was absolutely good stuff. It didn't matter that she couldn't open it, she had an expert at her side. A

free-of-charge expert she didn't use would be a waste, naturally, she must use him to the fullest.

Su Luo very naturally handed the box over to Nangong Liuyun: "Here, open it to take a look, don't know what treasure is inside."

Nangong Liuyun, with a complicated expression, cast a glance at that adorable puppy on Su Luo's shoulder. He really didn't expect that such a small puppy was actually a real, divine, treasure hunting tool.

Having such a divine treasure hunting tool, it could be said that in this Amethyst Fish Palace, they possessed a huge advantage.

Thinking up to here, Nangong Liuyun's gaze once again landed on Su Luo's body.

This girl's luck... he truly started to suspect whether she was able to step on the Amethyst Crystal Fish while walking.

"Hurry up and open it so we can have a look." It was rare that Nangong Liuyun would be absent-minded, Su Luo extended her hand and waved it in front of his face.

"Yeah." Nangong Liuyun regained his wits, and concentrated his attention on probing the inside of the red sandalwood box.

The seal was difficult for Su Luo, however, the same could not necessarily be said with regards to Nangong Liuyun.

One could hear a 'bang' sound echoing, and suddenly, the top part of the box flicked up.

In the red sandalwood box quietly laid a small sphere, it was the size of an adult's fist and entirely jet black in color. According to Su Luo's opinion, this thing somewhat resembled a hand grenade.

When Nangong Liuyun saw this thing, his expression stiffened slightly.

Su Luo speculated secretly: able to make even Nangong Liuyun slightly shocked, in the end, what was this thing?

Nangong Liuyun very warily shut the lid of the red sandalwood box, while doing it, he also drew a seal on top. Perceiving Su Luo's stare, the corner of his

mouth arced up into a smile: “It’s no bother, this seal, a third rank in strength is able to undo it. If it is not sealed, just by you picking it up, it will put you in danger.”

“In the end, what is this thing?” Su Luo was very curious.

“A spirit pinball.” Nangong Liuyun admiringly gazed at Su Luo: “In the whole world, who is able to match your luck? It is simply invincible, in the entire world, you couldn’t find an rival.”

“How can it be this exaggerated.” Su Luo annoyedly said, “You should explain this spirit pinball ah, in the end, what is it and of what use is it?”

“When an expert that is of the seventh rank or higher die, they can condense all of their spirit power into a spirit pinball. Therefore, every spirit pinball has the formidable power of a seventh rank or higher. However, this is a consumable item, once used, then it is gone.”

## Chapter 388 – Amethyst Fish Palace (10)

---

Nangong Liuyun handed that red sandalwood box over to Su Luo: “However, it is a very good item for saving your life, put it away properly, don’t lightly take it out.”

“Oh, then is this spirit pinball’s strength great or not?” Su Luo very carefully placed the spirit pinball in her space, after that, she asked Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head. “Its might is comparable to a seventh rank expert’s entire force in one strike, that is actually possible.”

Seventh rank expert’s full strength in one strike? With regards to Su Luo’s current third rank, so to speak, a seventh rank expert was already a very formidable existence.

This item was still really similar with hand grenades, wonderfully so, although the method differed, the result was the same. However, a hand grenade wouldn’t be able to hurt those experts, but this spirit pinball could.

Comparing by strength, this spirit pinball was much stronger.

“If there are many, many spirit pinballs, then that would be great.” Su Luo somewhat regretfully sighed.

Nangong Liuyun flicked her forehead with a sound like the bursting of a chestnut: “In this world, how could there be so many seventh ranked experts? If it was a seventh ranked expert that fought to the death, even if he could condense out a spirit pinball, then it would also be taken away by the opponent. So why would they condense one? Therefore, spirit pinballs that were handed down throughout time, are very few. Even if you have one, it is generally also passed down from generation to generation in large influential families. Able to be passed down are very few. You girl’s luck simply defies the natural order of things. Do you know, if this spirit pinball was placed on auction, what kind of

price it would sell for?”

“Will it be very expensive?” Wasn’t it merely just a seventh ranked expert’s full strength in one hit?

Nangong Liuyun seriously nodded his head. “It simply can not be estimated with gold coins. Moreover, it is basically impossible to buy it. If you were to use crystal stones, then you would need roughly fifty pieces of green-colored crystal stone.”

So expensive, Su Luo let out a cry in surprise, afterwards, she excitedly rubbed the little divine dragon’s head.

Today, not to speak of what was encountered first, just speaking of this spirit pinball, was enough to earn back the initial cost.

Suddenly, Su Luo raised her head and smilingly looked at Nangong Liuyun: “In other words, now, let’s say, if I take this spirit pinball to kill Li Aotian, then I am able to kill him right?”

Su Luo’s senses normally was very sharp, she could clearly perceive the Li family’s siblings’ killing intent towards her.

She knew, Nangong Liuyun insisting on slowing down his speed to stay behind and accompany her, was also out of consideration for this part.

Nangong Liuyun’s expression paused slightly, afterwards, the corner of his mouth hooked into a demonically charming smile and smiling faintly, he said: “Possible, if something unexpected doesn’t happen.”

“If I were to go kill the Jade Lake’s Fairy?” Su Luo smiling happily, watched him.

Nangong Liuyun’s thin finger, with the bones clearly outlined, pinched her nose: “Able to kill, then just kill her, probing this king is useless.”

“Who is probing you, wishful thinking.” Su Luo gave a light humph sound, but her mood seemed pretty good.

The two of the spoke while walking, as if idly taking a walk, through the main hall, leisurely and at ease.

After about an hour later, indistinct sounds of talking could be heard, as if up ahead, there were lots of people.

Those people saw Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo walk over in a leisurely manner as if taking a stroll, in the main hall. Each and every one of them was extremely astonished and also exceedingly speechless.

Really worthy of being called His Highness Prince Jin, because of a small girl, he actually renounced all the treasures inside this Amethyst Fish Palace. He actually took this Amethyst Fish Palace as a place for a stroll.

Nangong Liuyun's gaze swept towards them, these people immediately become silent. They lowered their head in reverence, not daring to whisper anything more.

Ahead was a long and endless passageway, and on both sides of the passageway, were rows of stone rooms right next to each other. There were so many that it couldn't be counted visually. It was estimated that a row was at least composed of several hundred rooms.

In front of the passageway, was erected a life and death monument.

The left side of the monument was written 'a narrow escape', and the right side was engraved with 'heavenly gifted treasure.'

Below the small words, were carved the rules for the life and death monument.

# Chapter 389 – Amethyst Fish Palace (11)

---

The life and death monument said that there were a total of four hundred and ninety-nine stone rooms, every room was different.

Good luck, maybe just going in, there would be a heavenly gifted treasure.

Bad luck, maybe just going in, would be confronted with a ferocious, prehistoric beast,

A room with heavenly gifted treasure was fortunate for you, you could come out at anytime. However, a stone room with a ferocious, prehistoric beast, unless you killed the defending beast inside, otherwise, just wait until you were torn apart by the opponent.

If the strength was equal, then when the Amethyst Fish Palace once again disappeared, that person would also disappear with the palace. If the person was capable of resisting one hundred years of starvation, maybe after one hundred years, they could still appear, but how could this be possible?

Therefore, the risk coexisted with the rewards. The higher the risk, the greater the rewards.

Everyone could only pick one stone room to enter, and also, no one knew what they would be confronted with.

Some people shrank back, not daring to enter, while some people advanced bravely in order to get a heavenly gifted treasure.

At this moment, a lot of people appeared to be hesitating, each and every one of them was standing in front of the door to a stone room, pacing back and forth. They had an appearance of wanting to enter but not daring to enter.

However, Su Luo completely didn't have this worry, because she had the little divine dragon. The little divine dragon had always been obsessed with treasure

hunting events.

Now, the little divine dragon appeared to be especially lively and glowing with spirit.

His nose sniffed around the surroundings, afterwards, he released his little short legs and ran ahead.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth pursed slightly.

He reckoned that the creator of the Amethyst Fish Palace also hadn't imagined that one day, there would be this kind of puppy capable of identifying whether inside the room was concealed a treasure or not through its sense of smell.

This was simply cheating, moreover, cheating with self-confidence and righteousness.

Now, the little divine dragon eagerly, with jolting buttocks, ran with lightning speed. While Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun merely strolled along slowly, as if that little puppy running wild and happily, was amusing itself, and was unrelated to them.

Finally, the little divine dragon stopped its footsteps, and joyously halted in front of a door to a stone room.

The stone room number was 123.

In front of the door to this stone room, now just happened to stand a person with a wonderful body and the appearance of a beautiful miss. This miss, Su Luo was very familiar with, it was not a stranger, but the Jade Lake's Fairy.

Now, she was standing in front of the door muttering to herself, her hand holding a compass appearing testing instrument.

One could only see her long, shapely eyebrows knotted slightly, she dithered for a long time, without having decided if she wanted to go in or not.

When the little divine dragon saw this Miss standing in front of this stone room, immediately, he became anxious!

The treasure inside this room, could not let others snatch it away!

Once the little divine dragon become anxious, it immediately bared its fangs at

the Jade Lake's Fairy, snarling fiercely. It had an ominous glint in its eyes, threatening her to leave quickly.

In general, most animals had an instinct to protect their food, and the little divine dragon, compared to them, was even more high-grade with his instinct to protect treasure.

The treasure he fancied, how could he let others be a step quicker and be first?

The little divine dragon completely did not know how lovable the tiny him with his little face taut in a deadly serious expression was, how very cute and adorable he looked. His heart was only focused on driving the person away.

The Jade Lake Fairy's contemplation was interrupted, she lowered her head to see a little puppy angrily howling at her. Taking another glance, she immediately recognized that this little bastard was Su Luo's spirit pet.

At that time, originally, an arrow could have shot Su Luo to death, but then this little thing came out and unexpectedly, outside of everyone's imagination, gnawed on that launched arrow.

At that time, she had paid careful attention to this little thing, now seeing it, immediately, her selfish motives rose.

This little thing was obviously not an ordinary puppy, very likely, it was some kind of rare. magical spirit pet. However, it had already signed a contract with Su Luo.

But no matter, as long as Su Luo died, the contract would automatically be lifted, then this little thing would be hers!

Now, she could establish a good relationship first.

## Chapter 390 – Amethyst Fish Palace (12)

---

The Jade Lake Fairy's smile was spread wide, she crouched down and good-naturedly smiled faintly towards the little divine dragon. She extended a slender, fair finger to tease him under his chin: "Little thing, is your original body a puppy dog? I don't believe it."

An 'oh' word had just left her mouth, when her finger had extended under the chin of the little divine dragon—

A red light flashed across everyone's eyes and a bloody mist gushed out.

"Ah—!!!" The Jade Lake's Fairy immediately issued a miserable cry, and her hand slapped towards the little divine dragon!

Now, the Jade Lake Fairy's, that forefinger from the right hand that was originally going to tease the little divine dragon, half of it was gone. It was snapped off by one bite from the little divine dragon.

The meat and the bone was neatly bitten off, the blood violently surging forth!

It could clearly be seen how good the little divine dragon's mouthful of teeth were.

The little divine dragon was from the most uncommon blood lineage of the divine dragon among the dragon race. After infancy, it would have the strength of a fifth rank, the him right now had at least had the cultivation of a fourth rank. Therefore, his speed was almost as fast as lightning.

When the Jade Lake Fairy's palm slapped towards him, he had long ago suddenly jumped up. His tiny little body jumped directly on top of the Jade Lake's Fairy's head, with his two paws tightly grabbing onto the Jade Lake's Fairy's hair.

The Jade Lake's Fairy was about to blow her top because of this little thing!

She had thought that with one slap, she could eliminate this spirit pet, she

never anticipated that the puppy's speed was this astonishingly fast. It was simply inconceivable.

The Jade Lake's Fairy grabbed towards her own head, she still didn't believe she couldn't even deal with a puppy.

However, what made her want to spit out blood, was that when she grabbed towards the puppy, his body rose like a bullet, and when she relaxed a little, he once again dropped down from up high.

What made her collapse from fury, was that he actually used her head as a tool for his game, stepping on top of it here and there, as if he was walking on stilts. He was also stepping on her very joyfully.

The Jade Lake's Fairy was so furious that she nearly passed out.

Her always perfect hairstyle without a single strand out of place, was trampled on by this puppy until it was simply beyond recognition. It was as disheveled as a beggar's, no, it was even inferior compared to a beggar's grandmother.

How could the Jade Lake's Fairy who always posed as above the common people endure this?

The Jade Lake's Fairy's heart became very fierce, she sent a severe palm strike to swat the little thing on her head!

However, the little divine dragon was extremely nimble, seeing that palm swat towards him, with a swishing sound, he jumped in front of the Jade Lake Fairy's head and grabbed her hair, swinging back and forth in front of her body.

The even more hateful thing was that his two little paws were still very lecherously stepping on the Jade Lake's Fairy's boobs!

Not far away, having long ago pulled Nangong Liuyun to stand in a corner, Su Luo saw the position of the little divine dragon, and she was simply speechless. She held her forehead and looked to the sky.

This was still an infant dragon, an infant dragon!

Such a young age, and it was already this lecherous, once it was grown up, how much more perverted would it be?

The little divine dragon completely did not understand his owner's anguished

wailing in her heart. Now, this playing made him even happier.

One minute, he swung to the back, another minute, he again withdrew into the Jade Lake's Fairy's sleeves. When the Jade Lake's Fairy was about to grab him, he once again crawled out from under the Jade Lake's Fairy's skirt. There was simply a myriads of playing methods he employed, there was nothing he wouldn't do, only those that couldn't be imagined.

Moreover, this little thing, he really had a little wolf-like nature of a lecher.

How to say it?

Just when he was drilling in and out of the Jade Lake Fairy's body, he still hadn't forgotten to use his sharp two little paws and thoroughly tear her clothing into tatters.

Starting from when he hid in her sleeves, he had already split the Jade Lake Fairy's sleeves from top to bottom into two.

When he dug out from under her skirt, he once again, conveniently in passing, tore the Jade Lake's Fairy's skirt into pieces.

Seeing this, the corner of Su Luo's mouth pursed and with great difficulty, she shifted her eyes away.

## Chapter 391 – Amethyst Fish Palace (13)

---

Whose family did this little rotten child belong to, quickly lead it home, he really was too embarrassing.

Su Luo speechlessly turned her head away.

The Jade Lake's Fairy was so furious that she nearly went insane!

She wasn't the only person here ah, even though the surroundings were sparse and full of space, but the number of people was not few. Furthermore, most of these people were men.

This way, under thousand of pairs of staring eyes, her always exceedingly refined image of an icy heart and clean as jade, was immediately ruined with not a bit left, by this lecherous puppy! Now, the Jade Lake's Fairy was itching to tear the little divine dragon into pieces.

"I want to kill you!" The Jade Lake's Fairy was in a towering rage. Unable to suppress the wrath in her chest anymore, she angrily pulled out her double-edged sword.

Able to stir up the Jade Lake's Fairy into a violent rage, the little divine dragon could also be considered the one and only.

The little divine dragon, seeing the Jade Lake's Fairy come over with a murderous expression, he instinctively felt a respectable dose of fear. Immediately, with 'whoosh, whoosh, whoosh' sounds, he turned around and started to just run. His speed was so fast, it was inconceivable.

The Jade Lake's Fairy's hair was messy, her clothing was disheveled, and she carried a sword, chasing after him!

Now, she was so unkempt and ragged that she couldn't even be compared to a beggar, wherefore was she still that Jade Lake's Fairy that was above the

common people?

Several of the surrounding men were dumbstruck as they watched the goddess in their mind being trampled on by a puppy. Then, she was unable to restrain her anger and pulled out her sword, chasing to kill it. Their hearts were all shocked incessantly, everyone looked at each other in dismay, not knowing what would be good to say.

The Jade Lake's Fairy was at the apex of the fifth rank in cultivation, with regards to strength, hers was higher than the little divine dragon's by a lot. The little divine dragon merely relied on his speed being fast, if they were really to fight each other, he completely lacked the ability to succeed.

The little divine dragon was also not stupid, he turned around and ran towards Su Luo's side.

It might have been due to his instinct of self-preservation, but he didn't even look at Su Luo and directly jumped up. His very small body immediately curled up and rolled into Nangong Liuyun's spacious sleeves, in a flash, all traces of him were hidden.

The Jade Lake's Fairy rushed over with her sword drawn, with her own eyes, she saw that hateful puppy hide away in Nangong Liuyun's sleeves.

Now, she had completely forgotten about her current wretched, ragged appearance with messy hair and disheveled clothing. Panting in rage, she said to Nangong Liuyun: "Third senior brother, I ask you to definitely return that little thing to me! Today, if I don't kill it, it would be difficult for me to eliminate this hatred in my heart!"

Her finger was just in that way, had a chunk been bitten off, how could the Jade Lake's Fairy, who was widely known as always perfect, endure it?

Nangong Liuyun's face had a perplexed expression, his voice was clear and cold: "What little thing, why is it that this king hadn't caught sight of anything?"

Saying this, he put both of his hands behind his back, with both eyes raised and an innocent expression on his face.

Once the Jade Lake's Fairy heard these words, immediately, she felt extremely aggrieved: "Third senior brother! How could you be so heartless? You look at my

finger, my finger was forcibly bitten off by that puppy! That puppy is obviously within your sleeves, I saw it with my own eyes. Could it be that you will still harbor it? Could it be that in your mind, I can't even be compared to a dog?"

The Jade Lake's Fairy's eyes carried tears, crying like raindrops on pear blossoms. She looked lovely and pitiful, extremely distressed.

Nangong Liuyun frowned, with an indifferent tone, he said: "This king truly didn't see that puppy you are talking about, if you don't believe me, come have a look for yourself."

Saying this Nangong Liuyun very openly and aboveboard, rolled up his sleeves, and also very kindly, shook his sleeves. He then cast a glance at her: "Look at it clearly, nothing is in here, and especially not the puppy you are talking about."

How could it be like this...Plainly, her gaze had all along been watching in all directions, that puppy simply hadn't fled from his back.

The Jade Lake's Fairy's sight shifted to Su Luo's body.

Su Luo also openly laid out her hands: "My clothing, however, has narrow sleeves, even if I wanted to conceal it, I couldn't."

## Chapter 392 – Amethyst Fish Palace (14)

---

The Jade Lake's Fairy's wrathful gaze shot towards Su Luo, furiously saying: "That puppy is your spirit pet, what are you prepared to do?"

Su Luo very artlessly spread out her hand: "What spirit pet? What happened? Why is it that I don't know about it?"

To capture a thief, you need the spoils, and must also be caught in the act, with both thief and evidence. Her little divine dragon had slipped away faster than a thief and wasn't captured on the spot, naturally, she must deny it till the end.

Su Luo didn't bear the slightest mental burden because her conscience was clear.

The Jade Lake's Fairy said in a towering rage: "You are simply shameless!"

Su Luo very irritatedly snorted: "The shameless one should be you, right. You keep saying that the fault lies in my spirit pet. If you have the ability, then take out some evidence."

Whoever suggested it, then they needed to provide the evidence. Before, her little divine dragon was indeed hiding within Nangong Liuyun's sleeves, but later, when Nangong Liuyun crossed both hands behind his back, she seized this opportunity to collect the little divine dragon into her space. No matter how the Jade Lake's Fairy searched, she wouldn't be able to find it.

The Jade Lake's Fairy didn't expect that Su Luo would be so contrary, she once again cried for help by casting her gaze towards Nangong Liuyun.

What made her disappointed to the point of despair, was that her third senior brother's gaze unblinkingly watched that little slut, as if the surrounding people, including her, were all transparent and did not exist.

“Good, very good! Su Luo, you remember this for me!” The Jade Lake’s Fairy covered her finger that was drenched in blood. With a malevolent appearance and vicious rays of light flashing through her eyes: “If you have the ability, then hide that spirit pet well, otherwise— —humph!”

Finished speaking, the Jade Lake’s Fairy flung her sleeves and left!

Nangong Liuyun heaved a sigh and looked at the retreating back of the Jade Lake’s Fairy: “From now on, be a little more careful of things.”

Su Luo also used the same regretful gaze to look at the back of the Jade Lake’s Fairy, slowly slowly, she shook her head and sighed: “Alas, she brushed past a good treasure like this, presumably, if she knew the truth, she would be infuriated to death, right?”

Finished speaking, she raised her eyes and looked at Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun smiled while rubbing her head: “Let’s go.”

Saying this, he led Su Luo by the hand and both of them stood fixed in front of the door to stone room 123, then pushed the blue-colored button on the door. Immediately, under their feet appeared a white halo that enveloped their entire body. When they opened their eyes again, the surroundings had already changed to a new environment.

Very clearly, they had already entered into the stone room 123.

Opening her eyes, Su Luo squinted slightly because she was assaulted by intense rays of light.

All around was the brilliant light reflected from the Arcane Ice Iron, with a radiance that dazzled the eyes. It was able to clearly send out an inverted image of their silhouette.

Now, hiding inside Su Luo’s space’s, the little divine dragon’s body stood upright, two little paws reached up on the wall in her space, continuously slapping it. His little face was anxious to the extreme, wishing he could just immediately dash out.

Su Luo helplessly smiled, within the time for one thought, the little divine dragon had already appeared on the empty ground in front of her.

The little divine dragon threw off the feeling of vertigo in his head, and when he saw the surrounding environment, his two eyes shined instantly. He immediately dashed towards the stone altar up ahead.

This stone room was approximately about one hundred square meters in area, all around was empty. Only on the stone altar up ahead, there seemed to have something laid out.

Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo followed behind the little divine dragon, and walked quickly towards the stone altar, full of curiosity.

The stone altar, it was more accurate to say that it was a jade altar.

The jade altar was about the size of a ping-pong table, and was carved from top-notch white jade. The surface of the jade was bright, clean and exquisite. It was so clear that it was able to reflect a person's image.

On top of the jade altar, calmly swimming for a long time, was a palm-sized, purple-colored goldfish. Also, in front of her, was a dark green, sea-colored bowl. Under this comparison of the two, the purple-colored goldfish seemed even more pitifully small.

## Chapter 393 – Amethyst Fish Palace (15)

---

This dark green sea-colored bowl had now actually been filled with chunks after chunks of crystal stones.

Red, orange, yellow, green, cyan... unexpectedly, every color was there!

Also, the sea-colored bowl was packed to the brim!

Su Luo couldn't help but inhale a breath of cold air when she saw this.

These crystal stones infused with radiant rainbow colors, there was no lack of green-colored and cyan-colored crystal stones inside. How precious were these crystal stones outside? Recall how she had painstakingly gambled on stones and struggled to earn only a little more than ten pieces of crystal stones at most.

Su Luo fixedly stared at that sea-colored bowl, unblinkingly looking at the various kinds of crystal stones within that sea-colored bowl. Weren't there about several hundred pieces of crystal stones in here? If she were to take it outside, then it would cause a huge sensation.

Su Luo was now somewhat stupefied, just like a destitute, frustrated beggar that all of a sudden, saw a room full of golden bricks appear in front of her. Moreover, it was still something in a state she could easily make use of, how could you ask a person not to be so excited?

Su Luo's gaze then landed on the purple goldfish.

This tiny palm-sized little thing...Wasn't what she thought it was right?

"Amethyst Crystal Fish?" Nangong Liuyun's complexion changed slightly and uttered in surprise.

The Amethyst Crystal Fish that countless number of people yearned for even in their dreams, just this abruptly and without any warning, appeared.

Su Luo couldn't help but inhale a breath of cold air.

Just now, she merely took a very small guess, she didn't expect it was the real Amethyst Crystal Fish.

Just at this time, the Amethyst Crystal Fish suddenly opened up its mouth. Immediately, a cyan-colored crystal stone was spit out of its mouth. It quietly shot towards that sea-colored bowl.

However, that sea-colored bowl was obviously filled to the brim with crystal stones and was already unable to hold this piece.

It was an event that occurred which made Su Luo surprised and also extremely regretful.

One could only see that piece of cyan-colored crystal stone being launched to the top of that pile of crystal stones in the sea-colored bowl. However, due to gravity and inertia acting on it, this cyan-colored crystal stone actually slid down from within the sea-colored bowl, landing on top of the jade altar.

One could only see and hear a 'thump' sound as that piece of cyan-colored crystal stone landed on top of the jade altar, then right after—

Afterwards, with the speed exceeding that of the naked eye, it disappeared without a trace!

"How could it be like this!" Su Luo was somewhat flabbergasted.

That was not just a red-colored or orange-colored crystal stone, that was a cyan-colored crystal stone ah! Lord, it disappeared. Back then, the Liu family, for just one piece of cyan-colored crystal, dared to actually bring the fight to Prince Jin's Royal Manor okay?

From this, it could be seen how rare a cyan-colored crystal stone was! On this continent, again, how precious it was.

But now, Su Luo helplessly looked on as a cyan-colored crystal stone vanished in front of her eyes.

Obviously, it was easily obtainable, but this kind of feeling of having let it slip away, was the most oppressive to the heart.

"In the end, what just happened! Where is the cyan-colored crystal stone?"

Where did it run to?” Su Luo very unhappily leaned forward onto the jade altar, meticulously and carefully searching for it. However, where could she even find a trace of the cyan-colored crystal stone?

“It should have been swallowed by the jade altar.” Nangong Liuyun observed it for a while and arrived at a conclusion.

“This jade altar can also swallow it?” Su Luo was simply incredulous, could it be that the jade altar also had the intelligence of a spirit?

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head: “In this world, all living things engender and subdue each other. This Amethyst Crystal Fish can spit out crystal stones from its mouth, really defying the natural order of things too much. According to the laws of the world, it would be correct to say that there must be some restrictions eventually.”

After a pause, Nangong Liuyun continued to say: “Amethyst Crystal Fish can spit out three pieces of crystal stones in one day, every grade of crystal stone appearing in random order. Spitting it out for one hundred years, then how astonishing would the amount of crystal stones be? As long as it appears in the world, it absolutely would cause the unrest of the entire continent. Therefore, it must be limited, which ought to be that any which exceeded what the sea-colored bowl could hold, would be swallowed up by the jade altar. Also, it could be interpreted as automatically taking it back for the Amethyst Crystal Fish, because this jade altar is linked together with the Amethyst Crystal Fish, resulting in an irresolvable situation.”

## Chapter 394 – Amethyst Fish Palace (16)

---

Having heard what was said, Su Luo swiftly grabbed a sack from her space, and was just about to stuff all the crystal stones in the sea-colored bowl and take it back.

But just at this moment, suddenly, the little divine dragon leaned in closer. With his two little paws, he easily grabbed a handful of crystal stones and lifted it towards his own mouth.

Just when Su Luo was distractedly staring at this dumbfoundedly, the little divine dragon once again rapidly grabbed another handful of crystal stones and stuffed it into his own mouth.

After being grabbed twice by his paws, that huge sea-colored bowl now had only one third of the original crystal tones left over!

However, without waiting for Su Luo to react, the little divine dragon, being a glutton, had swallowed an excessive amount of crystal stones. His two plump and huge eyes were in a state that looked like the hypnosis spiral. His little brain was dizzy, with his little body swaying back and forth as if drunk. Finally, his little body curved towards the ground and immediately, he lost consciousness.

Su Luo was really very angry, and at the same time, she also found it ridiculously funny.

Why did this little thing eat so urgently? It wasn't like she wouldn't raise him.

After Nangong Liuyun examined him, he immediately smiled: "Rest assured, nothing is wrong with him. It should be because he swallowed an excessive amount of crystal stones and automatically entered the unconscious state to cultivate. Wait until he wakes up, then his strength ought to have changed somewhat."

“I hope it will be so.” Su Luo picked up the little divine dragon, who seemed to be in a drunken state, from the ground, and then put him away into her space.

Relying on the little divine dragon’s fortune, they finally found the Amethyst Crystal Fish. Su Luo’s mood seemed to be very cheerful.

Before, the Jade Lake’s Fairy had dithered for a long time in front of the doorway to this stone room. Just when she was about to enter, she was toyed with by the little divine dragon until she was bedraggled and exhausted.

Last time, it was the same with Liu Chengfeng, that piece of source stone he was about to cut was fancied by the little divine dragon. He couldn’t win in a fight, so he had directly urinated on top of that stone and made Liu Chengfeng disgusted enough to walk away.

If the Jade Lake’s Fairy knew that she lost the Amethyst Crystal Fish because of the little divine dragon’s interruption, don’t know if her intestines would be green from regret. Really want to see her appearance of being regretful until becoming frantic.

However, able to steal the Amethyst Crystal Fish from the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s hand, this kind of feeling was truly invigorating.

Su Luo, while thinking this, also pressed her hands on top of the jade altar, and straightforwardly collected the entire jade altar with the Amethyst Crystal Fish, into her space.

Her space, through the process of having that sea-colored bowl full of all kinds of crystal stones, once again increased countless times in size. Now, the inside of her space was huge, she completely did not need to worry about the issue of storage space.

However, Su Luo felt somewhat guilty....Nangong Liuyun had accompanied her for the whole journey, yet the two treasures they found along the way were both given to her. Nangong Liuyun hadn’t reaped any rewards, this made Su Luo feel somewhat apologetic.

In her heart, she secretly resolved that she must look for an opportunity to find a useful treasure for Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun who was being stared at by Su Luo until his heart became

somewhat scared, stroked her head and said: “Your eyes are whirling and spinning around, what sly idea are you planning again right now?”

Su Luo smilingly said: “It’s a secret.”

Exiting out of the stone room, both of them walked around with a saunter. As before, they were leisurely and in a carefree manner, strolling along as if touring the street.

Walking past a dark corridor, the sounds of people talking could be heard from up ahead. From the sound of voices, it seemed that there were quite a few people ahead.

Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun exchanged a glance, both of them increased their speed and walked ahead.

Up ahead stood a circle of people forming a dense mass.

Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan, Anye Ming, not a single one was missing as they stood on one side.

On the other side, the crown prince, Li Aotian and the Jade Lake’s Fairy was also present.

Seeing Nangong Liuyun coming over, an vexed expression passed over Beichen Ying’s eyes. With a frown, he said: “We are done for, do you know, the Amethyst Crystal Fish was actually obtained by Nangong Liujue and them!”

Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo exchanged a meaningful glance, both of them looking at each other in dismay.

The Amethyst Crystal Fish was definitely inside Su Luo’s space, how could there be another one in the crown prince’s hand?

Now, the crown prince arrogantly walked towards Su Luo.

## Chapter 395 – Amethyst Fish Palace (17)

---

Now, the crown prince's entire face was full of joy. He had an air of complacency and a smug appearance as if he had obtained the number one treasured object under the heavens.

He arrogantly lifted his eyebrows at Su Luo, and coldly smiled: "Loathsome girl, you arrived too late. The Amethyst Crystal Fish is already within this prince's hand, hahahahaha——"

The corner of Su Luo's mouth pursed slightly, smiling a smile that was not quite one: "Amethyst Crystal Fish? Where is it, why is it that I didn't see it? Isn't it probably merely just something you said to yourself?"

A sneer appeared in the depths of the crown prince's eyes. He held out the hand that was behind his back all along. In the center of that hand, shockingly, there actually was a purple-colored goldfish.

Su Luo carefully looked at it.

She discovered that this Amethyst Crystal Fish, whether it was size or color, was almost exactly the same as the one she had. The only difference was that it lacked the sea-colored bowl in front of it, and also that flat, smooth-as-a-mirror jade altar.

Su Luo somewhat didn't understand...Could there actually be two Amethyst Crystal Fish?

Seeing Su Luo frown, the crown prince was even more insolently arrogant, and he burst into a hearty laugh. He pointed at Nangong Liuyun and very smugly said: "Amethyst Crystal Fish is in my hands, hahahahaha, from now on, I will never lose to you, not anymore!"

Nangong Liuyun, that matchlessly handsome face was steeped in a wantonly

nefarious smiling expression, his tone was low and dark: “Really?”

Such a nature-defying treasure as the Amethyst Crystal Fish, only one would appear every hundred years in the Amethyst Fish Palace, and also, there was only one such fish and that’s it. Moreover, that fish was in his little Luo Luo’s hand.

The crown prince thought that on Nangong Liuyun’s face, he was pretending not to care. but his heart was envious to death. He laughed even more joyfully.

“Nangong Liuyun ah, Nangong Liuyun! You are too self-confident! Too much belief in being infallible! Don’t tell me you thought that with that kind of unhurried strolling along, you would be able to obtain the Amethyst Crystal Fish? That all the treasured objects are just waiting for you to pick up? Now, you must be regretting it! hahaha——”

Seldom would he win once against Nangong Liuyun. The crown prince was happy to the extent of forgetting himself, so excited as to nearly go insane.

Nangong Liuyun truly pityingly watched his older brother in name only, and faintly sighed.

How could he have the heart to tell the crown prince, that inside the Amethyst Fish Palace, there were fake Amethyst Crystal Fishes. Moreover, the fake Amethyst Crystal Fish could...sigh, sigh.

Su Luo saw the crown prince jeering at Nangong Liuyun, and she didn’t know why, but a trace of angry intent flashed through her heart protectively.

Could be that she herself wasn’t even aware of it, but she already considered Nangong Liuyun to be her own people.

Su Luo was determined not to let the crown prince have an easy time.

Her strategy was very simple, it was to sow discord.

Su Luo merely smiled faintly, pointed at that Amethyst Crystal Fish and said to the crown prince: “Really congratulations to Your Highness the crown prince, the Amethyst Crystal Fish is a great treasure, but...”

Su Luo’s gaze swept around in a circle, finally fixing her gaze on Li Aotian and the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s bodies. She feigned distress and sighed out a sentence:

“But there is only one Amethyst Crystal Fish, the Li family pair of brother and sister put in a lot of effort and strength, right? How could this Amethyst Crystal Fish be best split then?”

The crown prince was slightly stumped for words.

This Amethyst Crystal Fish was one that he took out from within a stone room, naturally, it belonged to him. How could it have even a hair of relationship to them in the Li family?

However...The crown prince subconsciously looked towards Li Aotian. Seeing his pair of eyes, fixed on the Amethyst Crystal Fish that shone with a burning radiance, immediately, the crown prince's heart was apprehensive. His complexion continue to sink down directly, with an expression covered in haze.

Su Luo lightly smiled and turned her face away.

Nangong Liuyun found it laughable and rubbed her head.

Even though he did not mind Nangong Liujué's attitude, but this girl having the mind to stick out for him, this was sufficient proof that her heart already had him in its place. This discovery made him very happy.

## Chapter 396 – Amethyst Fish Palace (18)

---

Her strategy was very simple, but also very effective.

With just a brief sentence, she created a crack in the crown prince and Li Aotian's tentatively agreed upon alliance.

Having planted the seeds of doubt, the growing of roots, germination, then flourishing in maturity, were also merely a minute's affair.

Nangong Liuyun looked at this bright, elegant and charming girl in front of him. He couldn't help but somewhat sigh.

What's to be done? He was very fond, extremely fond, of this girl. He simply liked her to the point of almost suffocating. He really wished he could tie her to his side, always keeping her close to him.

At this moment, the atmosphere inside the main hall was a little strange.

The crown prince was strutting around, self-satisfiedly and proudly showing off in front of Nangong Liuyun.

But Nangong Liuyun didn't even glance at him, he was solely engrossed in gazing at Su Luo with loving, indulging and tender affection.

Jade Lake's Fairy stared at Su Luo with hatred as well as envy, wishing her gaze could stab a hole into her face.

But Su Luo merely composedly and easily tried to drive a wedge between the crown prince and Li Aotian, attempting to make them automatically collapse and fall apart.

In this queer atmosphere, Beichen Ying softly sighed, breaking this strange calm.

“There isn't much time left, ahead is the most important test to pass, will you

guys go or not?” Beichen Ying glared at Nangong Liuyun with a look of resentment for failing to meet his expectations and impatience to see some improvements.

Up ahead was another test that was greatly related to the Amethyst Crystal Fish, but now, the Amethyst Crystal Fish was in the crown prince’s hands.

Should they take action to grab it? Beichen Ying considered this while holding his chin, he cast a glance that harbored evil designs at the Amethyst Crystal Fish in the crown prince’s hands.

The crown prince saw the look from Beichen Ying and immediately returned to his senses from his elation.

The people he took along was not many, in addition to Li Aotian and Li Yaoyao, these two temporarily allies. However, the crown prince had no choice but to admit that if Nangong Liuyun insisted on forcibly taking it, then he was certain he couldn’t safeguard the Amethyst Crystal Fish.

The crown prince coldly snorted towards Nangong Liuyun: “The dignified and majestic His Highness Prince Jin wouldn’t degrade himself to robbing other people’s treasure, right?”

The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth hooked up into a ghost of a smile, he raised an eyebrow while looking towards that Amethyst Crystal Fish. In his demonically charming pair of eyes, flashed a cold-blooded expression: “You really think that is a treasure?”

The crown prince’s heart was startled, then afterwards, he repeatedly laughed evilly: “It’s said grapes are sour when you can’t eat them! I didn’t expect you, Nangong Liuyun, to also only be like this!”

The implication was that Nangong Liuyun couldn’t obtain the Amethyst Crystal Fish, therefore, he deliberately said that his Amethyst Crystal Fish was a fake. Clearly, it was because Nangong Liuyun was jealous of him.

Nangong Liuyun faintly smiled, declining to comment.

Nangong Liuyun’s careless bearing that was light as a cloud and gentle as a breeze had thoroughly ignited the crown prince’s fury, and he coldly snorted: “If I can prove that it is the real Amethyst Crystal Fish, what will you do?”

“Want to bet again?” Nangong Liuyun’s gaze that harbored evil designs sized up the crown prince from top to bottom, then sighed with a manner of taking pity on him, “Still, it’s better not to, right? You’ve already lost one thousand five hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones to my family’s Luo’er, to bully you once more will make us feel somewhat bad about it.”

Nangong Liuyun was telling the truth, yet inevitably, there will be some people who hear the truth as an ironic remark, and the crown prince was exactly this kind of person.

This sentence by Nangong Liuyun completely stirred up the crown prince. One could only observe him coldly and solemnly, furiously shout: “Nangong Liuyun, you have bullied people intolerably! Good, good, I will bet with you! Since you just mentioned one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones, then, if you lose, the debt of one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones will be transferred to you, how about it?!”

Finished speaking this sentence, the crown prince immediately applauded his own fast response.

## Chapter 397 – Amethyst Fish Palace (19)

---

Look at how clever he was, directly transferring those one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones to Nangong Liuyun, while he would be completely debt-free and light as a feather.

As for if Nangong Liuyun could afford the debt, that was not something he needed to consider.

Now, everyone in the surrounding crowd was staring with their eyes opened wide, watching this circle of people in front of them in shock.

They all knew that His Highness the Crown Prince had always been on bad terms with His Highness Prince Jin, however, they never confronted each other face-to-face. At this moment, the two of them were directly facing off, this kind of good play was normally hard to come by.

Each and every person in the surrounding crowd stared at the two people full of excitement, all guessing at who would win.

Reasoning told them that His Highness Prince Jin would never lose.

Their eyes and the facts, nevertheless informed them that within the crown prince's hand was the Amethyst Crystal Fish, absolutely real and authentic!

Then this bet, in the end, what direction would it head to? Everybody was extremely curious.

Nangong Liuyun cast an indifferent glance at Nangong Liujue: "What if you lose?"

The crown prince choked, immediately after, his complexion changed to a smug, complacent expression.

The Amethyst Crystal Fish was in his hands, how could he lose? If he didn't take huge advantage like a lion opening its mouth, he felt it would be a waste of

natural resources, unworthy of this chance given to him by the heavens.

The crown prince immediately gave several arrogant, cold snorts: “If I lose, I will compensate you an equal amount of one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones!”

In other words, the two people’s stakes were exactly one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones.

Nangong Liuyun, who was always not interested in gambling stakes, this time, he hung his normal attitude and raised his eyebrow, smilingly saying: “Agreed.”

“Nangong!” Lan Xuan uttered in surprise.

Even though Nangong’s insights were exceptional, however this time... could it be that the Amethyst Crystal Fish in Nangong Liujue’s hands was really a fake?

Beichen Ying, smiling happily, bumped Lan Xuan’s arm, “When have you ever seen Nangong lose?”

Since Nangong dared to accept these stakes, then this proved his heart was sure of success long ago.

This guy was simply a master at acting as if there weren’t any incentives, by no means would he allow himself to suffer a loss.

Lan Xuan thought about it again, the facts were indeed like this. Therefore, he and Beichen Ying speculated a bit, and stared at the crown prince with a laughing look, waiting to see what would happen. Their look made the crown prince’s heart somewhat scared.

The crown prince’s heart was somewhat apprehensive at first, after all, it was still one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones. Moverover, he still owed one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones to Su Luo from before. If he was to lose this bet, he must take out three thousand green-colored crystal stones. Even if you killed him, he wouldn’t be able to pay it.

However, when the crown prince saw Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan winking towards him, following this, his heart immediately calmed down. Humph, he didn’t expect that Nangong would actually employ this kind of senseless method to deceive him by making him renege on this bet, so childish!

The crown prince, with a few brush strokes, wrote down a letter of guarantee similar to the one he wrote before with Su Luo.

Afterwards, everyone signed their names on the three copies.

The crown prince had one copy, Nangong Liuyun had another, and the last copy was like before, left in Beichen Ying's hands.

“Now, how to proven that the Amethyst Crystal Fish in His Highness the Crown Prince's hands is real ah?” Beichen Ying pretended to ponder while holding his chin, “There is a very simple method. The real Amethyst Crystal Fish will spit out three crystal stones per day, morning, noon and night, not missing once. Then now, must we continue waiting?”

Nangong Liuyun glanced faintly at the crown prince: “Why abandon what is near to look for something far away?”

Beichen Ying, through tactful understanding, immediately added an explanation to that sentence, “The Amethyst Crystal Fish is linked in countless ways in connection to the Amethyst Fish Palace. It is said that having the Amethyst Crystal Fish is like having a sensor and can assist in choosing the one path from the nine routes up ahead. Furthermore, this road leads directly to the Secret Collection Library.”

## Chapter 398 – Amethyst Fish Palace (20)

---

An Amethyst Crystal Fish that could spit out crystal stones was naturally a treasure. However, after processing the Amethyst Crystal Fish, it would be convenient to go straight to the Secret Collection Library without stopping. As far as cultivators were concerned, this was the most attractive lure.

The Secret Collection Library, as the name implied, was a library with a collection of rare books. It was said that the library collection was abound with rare and secret martial arts technique books, and every kind of elemental system's cultivation methods also existed.

This was the real reason why everyone entering the Amethyst Fish Palace would fight over the Amethyst Crystal Fish. This was their true objective.

And as to the place everyone was standing on now, it was a vast platform. Up ahead, with clouds and mist curling up and making it hard to see, appeared nine roads in front of everyone. Nearly every road looked exactly the same, basically, there was no way to distinguish them apart.

However, among these nine roads, there was only one safe road that led to the Secret Collection Library. The remaining eight other roads were very dangerous, after a narrow escape, it still might not lead directly to the Secret Collection Library.

The crown prince possessed the Amethyst Crystal Fish, and the Amethyst Crystal Fish had a connection to the distant Secret Collection Library. If the Amethyst Crystal Fish in the crown prince's hand was real, then the crown prince would be able to find the correct road that led directly to the Secret Collection Library.

The crown prince coldly smiled: "Good, just this once, I will let you guys experience the secret to this Amethyst Crystal Fish."

The center of the crown prince's palm supported that small, sparkling, translucent and pure Amethyst Crystal Fish. In a split second, he pushed all the spirit force in his body into the body of that Amethyst Crystal Fish, trying to conduct a joining of the mind with the Amethyst Crystal Fish.

Just at this time, the Amethyst Crystal Fish's original body with a dull luster, was as if it was set ablaze with light, in a flash, it started to shine.

In addition, the originally transparent purple color, had now become more and more red, brighter and brighter, with brilliant rays radiating all around that burned a person's eyes.

The crown prince contemptuously cast a glance at Nangong Liuyun, and sneeringly said: "Don't you see? This is the real Amethyst Crystal Fish!"

Nangong Liuyun merely smiled but did not speak. His smile was not quite one, and he raised an eyebrow to look at him. In addition, he took the initiative to pull Su Luo along while retreating a step backwards. He thought about it and pulled Su Luo with him as he retreated backwards another step. As if thinking in this manner, they had already retreated to a safe range away.

This action by Nangong Liuyun suddenly not lightly infuriated the crown prince.

His heart was extremely vexed, wishing that he could rip Nangong Liuyun apart.

But he didn't have the means because Nangong Liuyun's martial arts cultivation was much greater than his. If they were really to fight, he would only be tyrannized.

The crown prince could only pour all the furious thoughts in his heart into the body of the Amethyst Crystal Fish. An unending stream of spirit force rushed into the body of the Amethyst Crystal Fish, with the fish becoming even more scarlet, a scarlet red. Moreover, if you paid close attention to it, you could see silken strands of smoke.

The crown prince tried to link up with the Amethyst Crystal Fish, but what made him despair was that the Amethyst Crystal Fish seemed like an idiot without a soul. No matter how he called out to it, it never gave him any

response.

The crown prince thought it was because the spirit force he poured in was too little, so he could only add more vigor when conveying more spirit force into its body.

However, it was still no good.

Li Aotian frowned.

“I’ll do it.” He advanced forward, extending his hand to lustfully grab that Amethyst Crystal Fish.

If before, the crown prince perhaps might still relinquish it, but with Su Luo’s instigation, how could he still trust Li Aotian?

One could see the crown prince weakly say: “You help me convey spirit force into this Amethyst Crystal Fish together, I just don’t believe I cannot make it open!”

## Chapter 399 – Amethyst Fish Palace (21)

---

Li Aotian really wished to enter the Secret Collection Library a step earlier than everyone else. Seeing the crown prince this selfish and narrow-minded, he had no choice but to also agree.

The two of them concentrated all their spirit force and poured it into the body of that Amethyst Crystal Fish.

Su Luo curiously peered around at them.

Was linking up with the Amethyst Crystal Fish really this difficult?

In any case, it was easy for her to connect with her Amethyst Crystal Fish.

After a drop of blood, it recognized her as its owner, and she only needed to touch it with her mind and she could communicate clearly with the Amethyst Crystal Fish. She could also sense that emotion of deep admiration from a child coming through its body to her.

When Su Luo was in the midst of indulging in flights of fancy, Nangong Liuyun once again pulled her to take another few steps back.

Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan, these several people, still hadn't taken notice of this action. When they turned their head around, thinking to speak with Nangong Liuyun, they saw he had fallen back many steps.

What kind of clever person was Beichen Ying? These several people had grown up together with Nangong since little, with regards to his two-faced, wise and farsightedness, they naturally worshipped heartily. Everybody's rapport was very deep and extremely good.

Beichen Ying saw Nangong Liuyun's position, without saying anything further, with a 'whoosh' sound he scuttled to stand behind Nangong Liuyun.

Lan Xuan and Anye Ming also didn't fall behind, their speed was as fast as

whirlwind, with two 'whoosh' sounds, they also at last arrived at Nangong Liuyun's side.

Their voluntary movements, these actions, were somewhat big. Not to mention, they had been the focal point of many people's attention all along, so each and every move they made was stared at by countless gazes.

Seeing them repeatedly flee back, a trace of panic appeared on everyone's face. Without waiting for them to utter a question, the matter occurred without any ominous signs.

Nevertheless, it could be said that the crown prince and Li Aotian's attention were completely focused on the little Amethyst Crystal Fish's body.

In the wake of more and more spirit force, the red color on that Amethyst Crystal Fish become brighter and brighter. It became increasingly scalding to the hand.

Now, even with the crown prince's cultivation level, he also felt it was hard to hold on to it.

Li Aotian felt that something was wrong.

Based on the secret written records in the Li family's treasure storehouse, it never mentioned that it would be this troublesome to open the link to Amethyst Crystal Fish. Moreover, it would also not be burning hot to this degree—

Just when a faint sense of unease emerged in Li Aotian's heart.

A catastrophe without the slightest warning signs occurred.

One could only see the flaming red Amethyst Crystal Fish in the crown prince's hand momentarily look like a huge bomb, a loud 'bang' sounded, at lightning speed, it openly exploded!

All the spirit force he and the crown prince had poured into it just a moment ago, changed into a powerful, oval-shaped force that unfurled into the surroundings.

Li Aotian's reaction was fast, his body was nimble, with speed as fast as lightning, he retreated back.

However, because he was caught off guard, his chest was still burned by that

sudden explosive force.

He could clearly smell the stench of scorched flesh coming from his chest.

Even Li Aotian was like this, then the crown prince was even more tragic.

One could only see that the hand he used to hold the Amethyst Crystal Fish was blown to pieces. His face was painted black, completely unable to recognize his original features.

His body was lit up like a raging inferno from the explosive burst, flames were scattered all over his body, and half of his hair was nearly charred.

However, it seemed the crown prince was wearing a soft protective armor on his body. As a result, his body still did not suffer too much harm. It was merely that anything above his neck seemed exceedingly shabby and atrocious.

Apart from Li Aotian and the crown prince, this time, there were a great number of people who were affected by the explosion.

There were a few smart ones who, after seeing Beichen Ying group's actions, had also followed in retreating back beforehand. However, the overwhelming majority of people, because of curiosity, and wanting to see the Amethyst Crystal Fish in order to be the first to burst into the correct path, their figures therefore hadn't moved.

Thus, when the explosion's fluctuation assumed an oval shape that arrived to engulf everything, a lot of people were affected by that berserk force.

## Chapter 400 – Amethyst Fish Palace (22)

---

Momentarily, all around the area, a lot of people's upper torsos were covered in flames, looking exceedingly disheveled and wretched.

Moreover, these flames contained the crown prince and Li Aotian's spirit power, how could it be so easily extinguished?

For a moment, the surroundings were messy and chaotic. Everywhere, cursing sounds and sounds of misery could be heard.

The only people that were neat, clean, and unruffled in the midst of this chaos and were watching the drama, was Nangong Liuyun's group of several people.

Now, the expression on Beichen Ying's face was indescribably brilliant.

He pointed at the crown prince's battered and exhausted appearance, and burst into loud laughter with both hands on his hips. He was laughing so hard that tears were about to appear: "You guys quickly look, Nangong Liujue's, that appearance, hahaha, simply as if he was pulled out of a pile of coal, simply too funny."

He held his stomach and directly started to guffaw and 'ow' out loud, laughing so hard that he nearly couldn't straighten his waist.

Lan Xuan also laughed uproariously with his hands on his waist. "Guffaw, ow, guffaw, ow, the most laughable thing is that before, Nangong Liujue still took that fake for the real Amethyst Crystal Fish. He still flaunted it in front of us as if it was the real thing. Hahaha, never mind if it was a fake, but to still fall for the fake's booby trap——You guys tell me, isn't this the appropriate retribution?"

Anye Ming was not as excessively brash as those two, but his mood was obviously also very good. A spirited expression appeared in his beautiful eyes and he was smiling while shaking his head: "The pitiful crown prince, going to

contend with whoever would be good, but why did he stubbornly insist on seeking a fight with Nangong?”

Su Luo felt that this dramatic scene was also very amusing. She smilingly looked at Nangong Liuyun: “You, alas, as a guy, are being too perfidious right? You definitely knew earlier, that fake Amethyst Crystal Fish would explode, am I right? In addition, the more spirit force that was poured in, the more violent the explosion, isn’t that right?”

Nangong Liuyun calmly and composedly folded his hands behind his back, raised an eyebrow and said: “What kind of talk is this? How could this king be that kind of person who would disregard the masses?”

Su Luo gave a soft snort.

This bastard was so obvious, but still said it with that kind of righteous-sounding pompousness, totally hypocritical.

But, she was still quite fond of this kind of him that put on a false act, what’s to be done?

Just like a pretentious, cute, little boy that was very lively and who had done a good deed wanting take credit and get acknowledgement from an adult with a still proud, lovable, little appearance. He was simply too adorable that she was about to burst.

Su Luo thought up to here and subconsciously, went over to pinch Nangong Liuyun’s cheek with a smile.

However, just when her pair of hands pinched the two rounds of pink tender flesh on Nangong Liuyun’s cheeks, all of a sudden, she became aware that the surroundings were somewhat too quiet.

She turned her head around, Beichen Ying and those three had assumed the state of a Buddhist statue, with stupefied, blank gazes that were staring at her hand. The depths of their eyes flashed with feelings of astonishment and stunned shock.

Did she do something wrong?

Su Luo gave a clear cough and very naturally withdrew her hand. Then, she

swept Beichen Ying and them, the three, with an indifferent glance: “What are you looking at? Why aren’t you guys watching the great play?”

Beichen Ying’s huge eyes contained tears of excitement, almost to the point of kneeling for Su Luo.

Didn’t this Miss know what she was doing? Even a mother, being loving and proud, wouldn’t use this method to indulge a child. Could it be that she didn’t know, that what Nangong loathed the most was someone bumping him, and he hated it the most when someone touched his face, okay? What he was most disgusted with was when someone pinched his cheeks, okay?

Remembering back then, the most favored Li senior concubine in the palace, in order to show the virtuousness of a wife that was good-natured and good in traditional roles, she insincerely went to pinch Nangong’s face. Just wanting to tease him, almost— —

Beichen Ying almost didn’t want to recall the scene from that time.

Not only did this Miss Su do it, she still acted out the entire set.

She unexpectedly, actually extended her hands to pinch Nangong’s cheeks...If this wasn’t courting death, then what was?

Even though honestly speaking, Nangong really did like her, but this kind of thing was a basic principle, he certainly would not permit it to be destroyed, right?